

EVANGELICAL BIBLE COLLEGE OF WESTERN AUSTRALIA



HEAVEN, HELL
and
THE NEW JERUSALEM.

by

STUART MACDONALD [Dip Theo]

[BOOK 133]

JULY 2006

WHO IS JESUS CHRIST?

Professor Simon Greenleaf was one of the most eminent lawyers of all time. His "Laws of Evidence" for many years were accepted by all States in the United States as the standard methodology for evaluating cases. He was teaching law at a university in the United States when one of his students asked Professor Greenleaf if he would apply his "Laws of Evidence" to evaluate an historical figure. When Greenleaf agreed to the project he asked the student who was to be the subject of the review. The student replied that the person to be examined would be Jesus Christ. Professor Greenleaf agreed to undertake the examination of Jesus Christ and as a result, when he had finished the review, Simon Greenleaf personally accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as his Saviour.

Professor Greenleaf then sent an open letter to all jurists in the United States saying in part "I personally have investigated one called Jesus Christ. I have found the evidence concerning him to be historically accurate. I have also discovered that Jesus Christ is more than a human being, he is either God or nothing and having examined the evidence it is impossible to conclude other than he is God. Having concluded that he is God I have accepted him as my personal Saviour. I urge all members of the legal profession to use the "Laws of Evidence" to investigate the person of the Lord Jesus Christ and if you find that he is wrong expose him as a faker but if not consider him as your Saviour and Lord"

HOW CAN I BE SAVED?

Salvation is available for all members of the human race.

Salvation is the most important undertaking in all of God's universe. The salvation of sinners is never on the basis of God's merely passing over or closing His eyes to sin. God saves sinners on a completely righteous basis consistent with the divine holiness of His character. This is called grace. It relies on God so man cannot work for salvation, neither can he deserve it. We need to realise that the creation of this vast unmeasured universe was far less an undertaking than the working out of God's plan to save sinners.

However the acceptance of God's salvation by the sinner is the most simple thing in all of life. One need not be rich, nor wise, nor educated. Age is no barrier nor the colour of one's skin. The reception of the enormous benefits of God's redemption is based upon the simplest of terms so that there is no one in all this wide universe who need be turned away.

How do I become a Christian?

There is but one simple step divided into three parts. First of all I have to recognise that I am a sinner (Romans 3:23; 6:23; Ezekiel 18:4; John 5:24).

Secondly, realising that if I want a relationship with Almighty God who is perfect, and recognising that I am not perfect, I need to look to the Lord Jesus Christ as the only Saviour (1 Corinthians 15:3; 1 Peter 2:24; Isaiah 53:6; John 3:16).

Thirdly, by the exercise of my own free will I personally receive the Lord Jesus Christ as my Saviour, believing that He died personally for me and that He is what He claims to be in an individual, personal and living way (John 1:12; 3:36; Acts 16:31; 4:12).

The results of Salvation

The results of this are unbelievably wonderful:

My sins are taken away (John 1:29),

I possess eternal life now (1 John 5:11,12),

I become a new creature in Christ (2 Corinthians 5:17),

The Holy Spirit takes up His residence in my life (1 Corinthians 6:19),

And I will never perish (John 10:28-30).

This truthfully is life's greatest transaction. This is the goal of all people; this is the ultimate of our existence. We invite and exhort any reader who has not become a Christian by trusting in the Lord Jesus Christ to follow these simple instructions and be born again eternally into God's family (Matthew 11:28; John 1:12; Acts 4:12; 16:31).

© Evangelical Bible College of Western Australia - PO Box 163 Armadale Western Australia 6992

Many other Christian resources are available freely from our internet web site: www.ebcwa.110mb.com and www.newstartbibleministries.org.au for weekly messages.

For further information contact Dr Peter Moses at PO Box 163 Armadale WA 6992 Tel 61 8 9399 1978 or email pjmoses@bigpond.com.au

We encourage you to freely copy and distribute these materials to your Pastor and friends. You only, need written permission from EBCWA if you intend using the materials in publications for resale. We encourage wide distribution freely!

INTRODUCTION

Have you ever asked yourself the following questions?

- Are Heaven and Hell real places?
- What are they like?
- How do I know if I am going to Heaven or Hell?

This study is an attempt to answer these three basic questions. The answers are sought from God's Word, the Holy Bible.

However, there is one all-important question that you need to ask yourself. The question is "What evidence am I prepared to accept?" Your answer needs to be completely honest and truthful to yourself.

HEAVEN

HOW TO UNDERSTAND THE THINGS OF HEAVEN.

Heaven is created for God's glory. Psalm 19:1. **The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth his handiwork.**

- God created the sky and space to communicate His Glory to us. Have you felt this when you have taken the time to look at the stars?

Have you felt small and insignificant? Psalm 8:3-4 says, **"When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained; What is man, that thou art mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him?"**

Therefore, Heaven is an addition to, not a subtraction of, the good and enjoyable things we experience on earth. This is how we should interpret the things of Heaven.

1. IS HEAVEN A PLACE?

The word "heaven" is translated from just two words;

Hebrew-: "shamayim" literally means "the heights". It occurs 420 times in the Old Testament.

Greek-: "ouranos" meaning "that which is raised up". Its primary meaning is "that which is above" (above earth and above man). Occurs 256 times in the New Testament.

"Shamayim". This word also refers to the different types of heaven according to the context. There are five types of heaven:

1. The sky where birds fly. This is the realm of dreams and visions (1 Chronicles 21:16).
2. The atmosphere where the elements of weather come from like frost (Job 38:29), snow (Isaiah 55:10), hail (Joshua 10:11) and rain (Genesis 8:2). This realm is God's storehouse (Deuteronomy 28:12). In Genesis 1:7,8 we find this word as a name for the firmament.
3. The third meaning refers to space, that is, where the sun, moon, planets and stars are. (Genesis 1:14-17). This meaning is also seen in the creation account and in the more poetical passages (Psalm 104:2 and Isaiah 34:4). In Job 9:8,9 the constellations of Arcturus, Orion and Pleiades are named. See also Job 38:31,32.

(Note: Please refer to the EBCWA publication "The Heavens Declare the Glory of God – A Study of Biblical Astronomy" by Dr Peter Moses for more information on this subject.)

4. The phrase "heaven and earth" may refer to the entire creation as in Genesis 1:1.
5. Heaven as God's dwelling place. For example Deuteronomy 26:15;

“Look down from thy holy habitation, from heaven, and bless thy people Israel, and the land which thou hast given us, as thou sworest unto our fathers, a land that floweth with milk and honey”.

Heaven, God’s dwelling place, is the highest of all the heavens. This heaven is not a part of the physical creation. Rather it is a unique realm. Deuteronomy 10:14;

“Behold, the heaven and the heaven of heavens *is* the LORD's thy God, the earth *also*, with all that therein *is*”.

This is the Heaven that we will be studying and exploring.

HEAVEN AS THE ABODE OF GOD.

The Bible clearly teaches that Heaven is the place where God is. This may be hard to understand since the Bible also teaches, “God is everywhere (omnipresent)”.

- God the Father is everywhere, 2 Chronicles 2:6.
- God the Son is everywhere, Matthew 28:20, Ephesians 1:23.
- God the Holy Spirit is everywhere, Psalm 139:7.

Scripture also teaches that the “heaven of heavens” cannot contain God (1 Kings 8:27).

However, despite this, the Bible always confirms the concept that Heaven is a place where God dwells.

Isaiah 57:15 says; **“For thus sayeth the high and lofty one that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy, I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.**

And Isaiah 63:15; **“Look down from heaven, and behold from the habitation of thy holiness and of thy glory; where is thy zeal and thy strength, the sounding of thy bowels and of thy mercies toward me? Are they restrained?**

There is no contradiction because of the omnipresence of God. The doctrine of God’s omnipresence does not mean that parts of God’s being are “spread out” through the universe so that one part of Him is here and another part somewhere else. Instead, this doctrine means that God’s whole being is in every place all at the same time.

David asks, in Psalm 139:7-11, is there anywhere one can go to escape the presence of God? His answer is no because His omnipresence is unlimited by space (verse 8) unaffected by speed (verse 9) and unaffected by darkness (verse 11). The fact that every believer is indwelt by God the Holy Spirit, Ephesians 5:17-21, is a good example of this facet of God’s character.

DOCTRINES

GOD: CHARACTER OF GOD

1. Whilst God is three persons all three persons have exactly the same essence or character:

a) SOVEREIGNTY

The Father (Ephesians 1:11 , cf Isaiah 40:8, Matthew 6:10, Hebrews 10:7, 9)

The Son (John 5:21, Revelation 19:16)

The Spirit (1 Corinthians 12:11 , cf Hebrews 2:4)

b) RIGHTEOUSNESS

The Father (John 17:25)

The Son (Luke 1:35, Hebrews 7:26, 2 Corinthians 5:21)

The Spirit The Holy Spirit

c) JUSTICE

The Father (Job 37:23, cf 8:3)

The Son (Acts 3:14, John 5:22, Revelation 19:11)

The Spirit (Nehemiah 9:20)

d) LOVE

The Father (John 3:16)

The Son (Ephesians 5:25, 1 John 3:16)

The Spirit (John 16:7-11, 1 Corinthians 2:10)

e) ETERNAL LIFE

The Father (John 5:26)
 The Son (Micah 5:2, cf John 1:1-2, 1 John 5:11)
 The Spirit (Isaiah 48:16)

f) ALL-KNOWING

The Father (Hebrews 4:13, cf Matthew 11:27, 1 Peter 1:2)
 The Son (John 18:4, cf Matthew 9:4, John 2:25, 1 Corinthians 4:5)
 The Spirit (Isaiah 11:2, cf 1 Corinthians 2:11)

g) EVERYWHERE

The Father (2 Chronicles 2:6)
 The Son (Matthew 28:20, cf Ephesians 1:23)
 The Spirit (Psalm 139:7)

h) ALL-POWERFUL

The Father (Mark 14:36, cf 1 Peter 1:5)
 The Son (Hebrews 1:3, cf Matthew 24:30, 2 Corinthians 12:9, Philipians 3:21)
 The Spirit (Romans 15:19)

i) UNCHANGEABLE

The Father (Hebrews 6:17, Psalm 33:11)
 The Son (Hebrews 13:8)
 The Spirit (John 14:16)

j) TRUTH

The Father (John 7:28, John 17:3)
 The Son (1 John 5:20, cf John 1:14, 14:6, Revelation 19:11)
 The Spirit (1 John 5:6, cf John 14:17, 15:26, 16:13)

HOLY SPIRIT IS GOD

1. The Holy Spirit is God, the third member of the Trinity.
2. The Holy Spirit is Jehovah God (Isaiah 6:8, 9, Acts 28:25, Jeremiah 31:31-35, cf Hebrews 10:15).
3. He has the characteristics of God:
 - a) sovereignty 1 Corinthians 12:11
 - b) all knowing (1 Corinthians 2:10, 11)
 - c) all powerful (Genesis 1:2)
 - d) everywhere (Psalm 139:7)

HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY IN THE OLD TESTAMENT

1. In the Old Testament, the Holy Spirit did not indwell all believers, since Christ was not yet glorified (John 7:39). Instead, He only came upon some Old Testament saints to perform special functions.
 - a) JOSEPH, a believer who was a prime minister. (Genesis 41:38)
 - b) Believers who were artisans occupied in the construction of the Tabernacle. (Exodus 28:3, 31:3)
 - c) Believers involved in administration. (Numbers 11:17, 25)
 - d) A believer who was both a political and military leader - JOSHUA (Numbers 27:18)
 - e) Certain Judges: OTHNIEL (Judges 3:9, 10) GIDEON (Judges 6:34) JEPHTHAH (Judges 11:29) SAMSON (Judges 13:24, 25, 14:5-6, 15:14)
 - f) Kings of Israel (1 Samuel 10:9, 10, 16:13)
 - g) DANIEL (Daniel 4:8, 5:11, 6:3)
 - h) Post exilic rulers (Zechariah 4:3, 12-14)
2. Believers in Israel could be disciplined by the removal of the Spirit:
 - a) SAUL (1 Samuel 16:14)
 - b) DAVID (Psalm 51:11)
3. A believer could obtain the Holy Spirit by request, but not as an indwelling presence. (2 Kings 2:9, 10, Luke 11:13)
4. Jesus gave the Holy Spirit without request to the disciples just before the ascension. Purpose: To sustain them for the ten day interim before the Church Age would begin. (John 20:22)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: BLESSED IN HEAVENLY PLACES IN CHRIST

1. Believers are said to be blessed with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ (Ephesians 1:3).
2. The same Greek word is used in (John 3:12) where the word 'things' is mentioned.
3. The heavenlies is the area of the believer's spiritual experience as identified with Christ in various ways:-
 - a) Divine nature (2 Peter 1:4)
 - b) Life (Colossians 3:4; 1 John 5:12)
 - c) Relationships (John 20:17; Hebrews 2:11)
 - d) Inheritance (Romans 6:16,17)
 - e) Service (John 17:18; Matthew 28:20)
 - f) Suffering (Philippians 1:29; 3:10; Colossians 1:24)
 - g) Future glory (Romans 8:18-21; 1 Peter 2:9; Revelation 1:6; 5:10).
4. The believer is a heavenly man and a stranger or pilgrim on the earth. (Hebrews 3:1, 1 Peter 2:11).
5. The believer is an ambassador from Heaven. (2 Corinthians 5:20).

REVELATION

God's purpose is that man should know Him and therefore respond to God in honour and worship motivated by love. In the written word we have the living word revealed. It all centres on knowing God, which is in turn based on Revelation.

1. The source of the knowledge of God is God himself. Human experiences and even religious experiences are not reliable in the accurate presentation of God. The Bible is what is sure of God's viewpoint and information about God. Any experience must be tested against the Bible. Romans 1:18-32 reminds us that man is fallen and that man's view of life is warped by the fallen state. However anyone who has lived on the earth has sufficient evidence from nature of the existence of God. Even with this evidence however most men will reject or distort the truth because they do not want to know Him. Fallen men will create his own god, which he can manipulate. What Paul is talking about is general revelation, which is available to all.

2. There is however specific revelation, which is the personal confrontation of man through the prophets, teachers and pre eminently through the Lord Jesus Christ. Those who accept general revelation will receive specific revelation.

3. It is progressive, that through the history of man God has revealed more and more about Himself.

4. God does not reveal Himself that people might know Him but for them to get into a relationship with Him.

5. Four factors that are prerequisites to the knowledge of God:-

[a] God initiated the process. Where was the creator, God came to man in the garden.

[b] God gave language in order that he might be able to communicate with fellow man and also with God. This is an area which causes a lot of trouble with the thinking evolutionist.

[c] Man was created in the image of God with free will, a mind that can think. Man is able to think in a rational way. Even though man is subject to total depravity. This means that you are unable to save yourself. However man is still fashioned in the likeness of God and is not totally depraved in that sense. We still have a mind, a will and a conscience even though it is a violated one.

[d] God gave the Holy Spirit to convict the unbeliever and convert the repentant. John 16:8-11

6. Paul in Acts 17:22-31 gave a message about general revelation in creation, the Lord Jesus Christ and the Bible as well as a couple of Greek poets, to show the Greeks that even their poets recognised general revelation. What Paul is relying on to effect their salvation is the work of the Holy Spirit. He is relying on specific revelation as the first Christian in Athens. You have an unknown God. Paul said. He was going to show the real God through the resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ. Some of those in the audience believed and were saved. There was a mixing of general and specific revelation as there were those who believed. You have to meet the pagan where they are with general revelation.. You move from general to specific revelation, from where they are to where the Cross is. This challenges the unbeliever. General revelation does not prove anything to anyone who does not want to know. It is however the basis of just condemnation of the unbeliever. In the end all will recognise God and He will get all the glory.

7. General Revelation

[a] His Glory Psalm 19:1

[b] His power to work in creating the universe Psalm 19:1

[c] His supremacy Romans 1:20 [d] His divine nature Romans 1:20

[e] His providential control of nature Acts 14:17

[f] His goodness Matthew 5:45

[g] His intelligence Acts 17:29

[h] His living existence Acts 17:28

8. Results of General revelation.
 [a] God's grace is displayed
 [b] To give weight to the case that God exists
 [c] To justly condemn rejecters.

THE USE OF TITLES.

Sometimes the Bible uses titles to teach about the existence of Heaven.

- Title: "Most High".

For example Psalm 7:17. **"I will praise the LORD according to his righteousness: and will sing praise to the name of the LORD most high.**

See also Psalm 18:13 and 57:2. These titles were used when the Psalmist was thanking God for divine help already given, or for appealing for His help to escape from trouble.

In the New Testament we see this same title being used by the angel Gabriel, in the annunciation to Mary, referring to the Lord Jesus Christ as the Son of the Most High. Luke 1:32:

"He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David:"

- Title: "The Lord, the God of heaven."

For example, 2 Chronicles 36:23. **Thus saith Cyrus king of Persia, All the kingdoms of the earth hath the LORD God of heaven given me; and he hath charged me to build him a house in Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Who is there among you of all his people? The LORD his God be with him, and let him go up.**

See also Nehemiah 1:4,5 and Daniel 2:37,44.

DOCTRINE

GOD: NAMES AND TITLES OF GOD

1. Father, Son and Holy Spirit Matthew 28:19,20. These titles emphasise the function of each member of the Trinity.
 - a) Father - the sovereign authority, who decreed the plan of salvation
 - b) Son - the obedient Son, who offered Himself as a sacrifice for sin according to the Father's will
 - c) Holy Spirit - the one who reveals the Son to mankind, thereby bringing honour and glory to Him
2. At the Lord's Baptism - Matthew 3 where the Spirit descends, the Father speaking from heaven and the Son being baptised.
3. We have the Father sending the Son in John 3:16, in John 14-17 we have the Son sending the Spirit.
4. We have the three fold titles of God Romans 5, 1 Corinthians 12, Ephesians 1, Romans 15
5. The Holy Spirit is called God in Acts 5, 1 Corinthians 3 and called the Lord in 2 Corinthians 3:17.
6. The works of the Lord are ascribed to the Father John 17, the Holy Spirit responsible for the procreation of the Son Luke 1:35, 2:11; the Son doing the will of the Father John 8, 10, the Holy Spirit sustaining the Son. Matthew 18:28, John 3:34
7. The Trinity are involved in the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ in the first advent. The death of the Lord Jesus Christ is the co operative work of the Trinity, the Father gives the son Romans 8:32, the Lord lays down his life John 10:18, the Holy Spirit empowers Him to offer Himself on the Cross Hebrews 9. On the Cross He addresses the other two members of the Trinity when He cried out "My God, My God why has thou forgotten me?"
8. All three were involved in the resurrection
 - [a] the Father - Colossians 2:12
 - [b] the Son as the person who was raised - John 2:19, 10:18, 1 Peter 3:18
 - [c] The Holy Spirit was involved in His resurrection - Romans 8:11 The Father, Son and the Holy Spirit will be involved in our resurrection.

9. The indwelling of the believer - John 14:23, we are the temple of the Holy Spirit - 1 Corinthians 6:19, we have the power in us - Ephesians 4:6, the Lord in us - Colossians 1:27

OTHER NAMES FOR HEAVEN.

Other names for Heaven in the Old and New Testaments give the idea of dwelling or habitation.

- Tabernacle.

This name refers to the Tabernacle built by Moses and the Tabernacle that the Lord pitched (Hebrews 8:2 and 9:11). In 1 Kings 8:12,13 is the idea of God dwelling in a temple on earth, which parallels His dwelling in Heaven.

V12. Then spoke Solomon, The LORD said that he would dwell in the thick darkness.

V13 I have surely built thee a house to dwell in, a settled place for thee to abide in forever.

And how do we know that the LORD God dwelt there?

V10 And it came to pass, when the priests were come out of the holy *place*, that the cloud filled the house of the LORD,

V11 So that the priests could not stand to minister because of the cloud: for the glory of the LORD had filled the house of the LORD.

The "cloud" is the Glory of God filling the temple, or the "Shekinah Glory". "Shekinah comes from the Hebrew word meaning to dwell. The glory cloud appeared as soon as the Ark of the Covenant, a representation of Christ, was put in its proper place in the temple.

But why the thick darkness when we usually associate God with light (1 John 1:5)? Mankind, in our fallen state, dwells in thick darkness. We are in darkness compared to His light, which is the light and happiness of Heaven.

Revelation 21:23. **And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.**

DOCTRINES

TABERNACLE

1. The Tabernacle was set up as the basic system of worship in Israel and was a part of the spiritual code of the Mosaic Law portraying the person of Christ, the unique High Priest, the unique person, the unique Saviour.

- a) The tabernacle also speaks of the human body in a tent or temporary storage place for the soul.
- b) The tabernacle also portrays God's dwelling place and portrays God's dwelling with man in grace.
- c) The tabernacle is also the place where man meets God and as the tabernacle represents the Lord Jesus Christ this shows that God meets people at the cross.
- d) Only the priest was able to enter the tabernacle and only the believer today has fellowship with God.
- e) The tabernacle was given in fine detail and shows that God plans things down to the finest detail.
- f) The tabernacle was divided into two parts - the outer area which represented the earth and the inner which represented God's domain.
- g) The inner area was divided into two, the holy place in which the Levitical priests functioned, the Holy of Holies in which the high priest functioned once a year. The holy place represents heaven, the Holy of Holies representing the throne room of God where our High Priest Jesus Christ constantly intercedes for us.

2. The Tabernacle was located in the centre of the camp. All around the tabernacle were the tribes of Israel, three to each cardinal compass point.

Principle: Everybody starts on the outside, only those who enter the tabernacle (i.e. are born again) have fellowship with God.

3. The specifications which start in Exodus 25 commence with the Holy of Holies. This is to show that salvation starts with God and not man. All blessing comes from God.

4. The tabernacle is a perfect rectangle 100 cubits by 50 cubits, 175 feet long, 87 1/2 feet wide and 8'9" high. It was always that way and never changed - God is unchangeable (Exodus 27:9-15).

5. The side of the tabernacle was supported by 60 brass pillars on the outer court, 60 brass sockets. Brass judgment, Pillars - cross. On the top of the pillars was a silver chapter. Silver - redemption. Twenty on the north and south side and 10 on the east and west sides (Exodus 27:9-15).

6. The outside of the tabernacle was of fine white linen - representing the righteousness of God (Exodus 27:9).

7. There was one door into the tabernacle - there is only one way to God - through Christ. The door was blue in colour and 35' wide. Once you had passed through the door you were inside the tabernacle representing imputed righteousness. The large width meant that all could pass through, the material was very fine showing that minimal faith was needed to enter in (i.e. weak people could push the material aside). There were four layers of material. In order they were blue, purple, scarlet, white:-

blue - deity of Christ,

purple - Kingship of Christ,

red - redemptive work of Christ,

white - total righteousness of Christ. Thus by the time you had fully passed through the door the white righteousness of Christ encompassed you completely (Exodus 26:36).

8. The pillars supporting the doors were of acacia wood overlaid with gold - the unique person of Christ. 5 pillars: 5 = grace, gold - deity, wood - humanity (Exodus 26:37).

9. The floor of the tabernacle weighed 6 1/2 tonne.

10. The roof had four layers: (Exodus 26:1-14)

a) Outer: Badger skin - Humanity, Ram's wool dyed red - Redemption, White Goat's hair - Sinlessness

b) Inner: Fine linen - Righteousness

11. There were seven articles of furniture in the tabernacle:

a) The brazen altar outside the door

b) The brazen laver near the door

c) The table of shewbread

d) The golden lamp stand

e) The golden altar near the veil

f) The mercy seat

g) The ark of the covenant.

The veil was between the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies; the golden altar was associated with the Holy of Holies.

12. THE BRAZEN ALTAR (Exodus 27:1-8)

This was situated adjacent to the entrance into the tabernacle. Brass represents judgment. You could not enter into the Holy Place unless you had sacrificed on the brazen altar. Fire burnt the sacrifice. Fire judgment.

Application: You cannot enter the plan of God unless you have trusted in Christ at the cross.

13. THE BRAZEN LAVENDER (Exodus 30:17-21)

The brass bowl filled with water. This was also situated outside the tabernacle. Prior to entering the tabernacle the priest washed his hands representing confession of sin. Brass - sins judged on the cross. Water - cleansing.

Application: Before we can have fellowship with God we have to confess our sins. In the Church Age we are all priests, we have to confess our sins before we fellowship. Our brazen laver is 1 John 1:9

14. TABLE OF SHEWBREAD (Exodus 25:23-30)

This was in the Holy Place, constructed of acacia wood overlaid with gold. Laying on top of the table was the shewbread, 12 loaves, one for each of the tribes except Levi. The loaves were made of fine flour without leaven baked with frankincense and baked in fire. Bread - fellowship, Fine flour - righteousness of Christ. No leaven - no sin. Frankincense - propitiation. Fire - judgment. The priests ate the loaves after they had been exhibited for 1 week. Eating

represents intake of Bible doctrine. Each loaf was placed under a crown showing the Lord Jesus Christ is the King of Israel. No leper priest allowed to eat, neither a stranger.

15. THE GOLD CANDLESTICK (Exodus 25:31-40)

This was also in the Holy Place constructed of gold - the candlestick represents Christ as the light of the world. There were seven candlesticks with a central stick, the other six branching off the central stick, three on either side. Six is man's number, seven is God's number - the perfect number.

Analogy - Man is made perfect in Christ.

The candlestick was the only light in the Holy Place. The fuel in the candlestick was oil. Oil represents the Holy Spirit. Oil in the centre stick represents Christ being empowered and relying on the Holy Spirit during his incarnation. Oil in the other lamps shows the Christian way of life walking in the Spirit (Galatians 4:19, 5:22, 23). The six candlesticks branching off the central stick represents the Christian in union with Christ and fellowship between Christians.

The candlestick weighed 48 lbs. (21 kg) and was beaten out of one piece of gold. It was very valuable and shows the preciousness of Christ. The candlestick was fashioned by beating and represents Christ suffering for the sins of the world. On the top of the centre candlestick they had knobs or pomegranates representing the eternal life and perfection of Christ. There were also almond buds opening up representing Christ being the fount of all life.

Flowers occurred on all seven candlesticks. The flowers represent the beauty of the character of Christ which we produce when we are filled with the Spirit. Each lamp had a wick which drew the oil up through the lamps. The wick has to be soaked in oil before it burns otherwise it emits smoke. Light - divine good or production. Smoke - human good or production.

Application: If the believer is empowered by the Holy Spirit he produces works which are noticeably different from the unbeliever. The burnt wick represents work for the Lord Jesus Christ. The priest used to collect the burnt wick and put it in a snuff box. God remembers our works for Him. (1 Corinthians 3:12-15)

An alternate interpretation of the candlestick likens the seven stems as the seven spirits of God as found in (Isaiah 11:2, Revelation 1:4). The spirit of the Lord, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord.

16. THE GOLDEN ALTAR OF INCENSE (Exodus 30:1 -10)

This is located just outside the Holy of Holies and represents intercessory prayer. The altar was made of gold overlaying wood and was in the form of a crown. The priest would go to the brazen altar, pick up coals, pass through the holy place and place the coals into the crown. Incense was then sprinkled onto the coals and the fumes coming up from the incense represented prayer to God. By taking coals from the brazen altar it showed that the basis for effective prayer is the death of Christ. The unbeliever cannot pray effectively except for accepting Christ as saviour. The only person who could obtain the coals was a priest representing a believer.

The crown is also significant. The cross must come before the crown, the crown also speaking of Christ the King priest after the order of Melchizedek. Fire spoke of judgment, the judgment of the cross being the basis for effective prayer. The Incense which was put on the altar contained four ingredients which speak of the work of Christ:

- a) Stukti - liquid from a gum tree representing the Father who is the recipient of prayer.
- b) Onoika - a ground-up shell (representing judgment). The burnt shell gave off a perfume (propitiation).
- c) Galbanin - the fat of a plant showing prosperity and representing the resurrection of Christ.
- d) Frankincense - a white gum used in crowning kings - representing the session of Christ.

17. THE ARK OF THE COVENANT AND MERCY SEAT (Exodus 25:10-22)

Located in the Holy of Holies the mercy seat was of gold. Over the seat were two golden cherubs which covered the mercy seat with their wings and looked down at the top of the mercy seat. In a box under the mercy seat were three objects representing sin, the tables of the law representing -transgression against moral laws, the pot of manna showing rejection of provision and Aaron's rod that budded showing rejection of authority. This was the ark of the covenant.

Once a year on the feast of the atonement, blood from a sacrifice at the brazen altar was brought into the Holy of Holies and sprinkled on the mercy seat. The blood from the brazen altar represents the death of Christ. The cherubs, one representing the righteousness of God, the other the Justice of God look down, see the blood and are satisfied. The sin of the human race is removed by the death of Christ.

- Sanctuary.

This word is used regarding God's dwelling in the Tabernacle as recorded in Exodus 25:8. It is also used when referring to Heaven. For example Hebrews 8:2;

A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.

See also Hebrews 9:8,12,24.

- Habitation.

Used in reference to the tabernacle (Exodus 15:13; Psalm 26:8) and to God's abode in Heaven. (Ps 33:14; Isaiah 63:15 and Luke 16:9).

- House.

This word is the most frequently used in reference to Heaven as God's abode. The best known passage of scripture is John 14:2.

Jesus said; "In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were no so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

Key Words.

- **"My Father's house"**. Refers specifically to Heaven, God's abode..
- **"mansions"**. From the verb meaning "to remain." Mansions refers to durable dwelling places. In other words Jesus is saying that in Heaven there is more than enough room for all who are prepared to come. Not only that, but He also has gone to prepare a special eternal dwelling place for each and every believer. This is a fantastic promise that a Christian can look forward to when its time to leave this earthly dwelling place for their true home!
- Temple.

This word is used of heaven as well as earthly buildings. For example Isaiah 6:1

In the year that king Uzziah died I saw the Lord sitting on a throne, high and lifted up, and the train of His robe filled the temple.

See also 2 Samuel 22:7.

- The "Throne of God.

Often Heaven is called the "throne of God." This name is common to the Old and New Testaments.

Isaiah 66:1. Thus says the LORD: "Heaven is my throne, and Earth is my footstool. Where is the house that you will build Me? And where is the place of My rest?"

Matthew 5:34. **"But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne."**

- Glory.

Used in reference to both to the earthly Tabernacle or Temple and the heavenly dwelling place of God. For example, the stoning of Stephen.

Acts 7:55. **But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into Heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God,**

See also 1 Timothy 3:16 and Colossians 1:27.

DOCTRINES

GLORY

1. Glory is used for the essence of God (Romans 3:23; Ephesians 1:17; Deuteronomy 5:24).
2. Glory is used in the scriptures for maturity (Ephesians 3:21; 1 Peter 1:8).

3. In a perfect marriage, the woman is the Glory of the man (1 Corinthians 11:7).
4. The grace of God is also described as Glory (Ephesians 1:6), and riches of Glory (Ephesians 1:18; 3:16; Philippians 4:19).
5. Heaven and eternal life are described as Glory (1 Timothy 3:16; Hebrews 2:10; 1 Peter 5:10).
6. Human glamour is also described as Glory (1 Peter 1:24; Philippians 3:19).
7. Glory is used to describe the wonders of the universe (1 Corinthians 15:40,41).
8. Glory is used to describe the resurrection body of the believer (1 Corinthians 15:43; 2 Thessalonians 2:14).
9. Glory for a woman is her long hair (1 Corinthians 11:15) as it shows her femininity.

SALVATION: EXPIATION AND PROPITIATION

1. Expiation and Propitiation are two sides of the same coin with propitiation being in relation to God while expiation looks at the problem from man's side.
2. By expiation the offence which renders the person guilty in the sight of God is covered from the eyes of God by the effective dealing with the problem by propitiation.
3. The Mercy Seat (the top of the Ark of the Covenant) in the Tabernacle was the place of propitiation.
4. The concept of the Mercy Seat must be understood in the light of the Ark of the Covenant (Exodus 25:10-22, 37:1-9).
5. The Ark of the Covenant was a wooden box (45" x 27" x 27") constructed of acacia wood (the humanity of Christ) overlaid with gold (the Deity of Christ).
6. Contents of the Ark: the golden pot of manna, the tablets of stone and Aaron's rod that budded (Hebrews 9:4). The tablets of stone represented man's transgressions against God's perfect standard, the rod that budded stood for man's rebellion against established authority, the pot of manna showed man's rejection of divine provision.
7. The content of the Ark is a picture of Christ bearing our sins in His body on the tree (2 Corinthians 5:21).
8. The Mercy Seat was a solid gold lid which fitted over the ark and bore two golden cherubs, one on each end representing God's holiness (Hebrews 9:5).
9. Once every year, on the Day of Atonement, the high priest entered twice into the Holy of Holies with a bowl of blood (once for his own sins and once for the sins of the people) (Hebrews 9:7). He sprinkled the blood on the Mercy Seat. God's righteousness and justice were satisfied.
10. Because of propitiation, or satisfaction of His holy character, God is free to love the believer.
11. The Mercy Seat represented propitiation with emphasis on the person of Jesus Christ, our own great High Priest.
12. "Mercy Seat" in Hebrews 9:5 has the same concept as the word propitiation (Gk. hilasterion) in Romans 3:25.
13. Propitiation is used to express the true and perfect love of God for all believers regardless of their status (1John 4:10).
14. Propitiation is used to relate the person of Christ and the "covering" of God's character (Romans 3:25).

GOD - SHEKINAH GLORY

1. The Shekinah glory is the visible manifestation of the presence of God. The usual title used is the glory of God
2. It is from the Hebrew word "shachan" meaning dwelling.
3. It took the form of light, fire, cloud or a combination of these.
4. At times it is associated with the following, the Angel of Jehovah, the Holy Spirit, The Cherubim and the motif of thick darkness.
5. Appearances of the Shekinah Glory in the Old Testament
 - a) The Garden of Eden [Genesis 3:8]

- b) The time of the Abrahamic Covenant [Genesis 15:12-18]
- c) The burning bush [Exodus 3:1-5]
- d) At the Exodus [Exodus 13:21,22]

- e) At Mount Sinai [Exodus 19:16-20]
- f) The special manifestation to Moses [Exodus 33:17-23]
- g) The Tabernacle and the Ark of the Covenant [Exodus 29:42-46]
- h) The book of Leviticus [Leviticus 9:6-7, 22-24]
- i) The Book of Numbers [Numbers 13:30-14:45, 16:1-50, 20:6-13]
- j) The period of Joshua and the Judges [1 Samuel 4:21-22]
- k) Solomon's Temple [1 Kings 8:1-13, 2 Chronicles 5:2-7:3]
- l) The departure of the Shekinah Glory [Ezekiel 1:28, 3:12,23, 8:3-4, 9:3a, 10:4, 18-19, 11:22-23]
- m) The Shekinah glory was not in the second Temple Haggai 2:3,9

6. Appearance of the Shekinah Glory in the New Testament.

- a) To the Shepherds Luke 2:8-9
- b) The Christmas star Matthew 2:1-12
- c) It comes in a new form John 1:1-14
- d) The transfiguration Matthew 17:1-8, Mark 9:2-8, Luke 9:288-36, 2 Peter 1:16-18
- e) The reflection of that glory. 2 Corinthians 3:12-18
- f) The Book of the Acts Acts 2:1-3, 9:3-8, 22:6-11, 26:13-18
- g) The Revelation Revelation 1:12-16,
- h) In the Tribulation Revelation 15:8
- i) The Second Coming of Christ Matthew 16:27, 24:30, Mark 13:26, Luke 21:27
- j) The Millennium Ezekiel 43:1-7a, 44:1-2, Zechariah 2:4-5, Isaiah 36:1-2, 58:8-9a, 60:1-3
- k) The Eternal State Revelation 21:1-3, 21:23-24

1.2 HEAVEN AND THE BOOK OF THE REVELATION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.

The existence of Heaven is spoken about most frequently in this book. The word heaven occurs 52 times. God's temple in Heaven is recorded in Chapter 11:19. The Apostle John records his vision of seeing Heaven open in chapter 4:1.

There is also a big emphasis on the word "throne" to describe Heaven. This word is used 36 times from Rev 1:4 to Rev 22:3. John also talks about multitudes of angels, for example, Rev 5:11. This subject is large and is beyond the scope of this book to cover in the detail it deserves to be studied.

However Heaven in the Book of Revelation could be summed up as follows:

- In Genesis the Bible begins with God creating the heavens and the earth.
- The New Testament begins with the Lord Jesus Christ coming down from Heaven to establish the kingdom of Heaven and to provide a way to eternal life with Him in Heaven.
- The last book of the New Testament shows Heaven and its citizens possessing knowledge of all that is going to happen on earth when God announces and executes His judgments on the nations and on Satan and his followers.

In this book we are told how all power and authority has been given to the Lord Jesus Christ and that He will bring those who He has redeemed and who believe in Him into their eternal home, which is also the home of God. That home is Heaven!

From the word study so far we can clearly see that Heaven is an actual place.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: TESTIMONIES BY CHRIST IN THE BOOK OF REVELATION

1. "I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last" - Jesus Christ knows all things (1:11)
2. "I am the first and the last" - He is eternal (1:17)
3. "I am he that liveth and was dead; and, behold, I am alive forever more, Amen; and have the keys of hell and death " - He became the God - man and died for us conquering death and saving us from an eternity in hell (1:18)

4. "These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks." - He has the ministers of the church in his hand and is present in the churches. (2:1)
5. "These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive." - He combines eternity with his sacrificial death. (2:8)
6. "These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges." - He is and has the Word of God. (2:12)
7. "These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass" - He is not only Saviour but is also Judge. (2:18)
8. "These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars."- He gave the church the Holy Spirit so that the church can function (3:1)
9. "These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth and no man openeth." - He is holy true and has authority. He also gives opportunities to enable us to serve. (3:7)
10. "These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God"; - He has the final authority and is the revelation of God and the source of God's creation. (3:14)
11. "Behold I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me." - He calls to man but does not coerce the freewill of man. (3:20)

REVELATION: BLESSINGS IN THE BOOK OF REVELATION

There are seven blessings in the book of the Revelation:-

1. A special blessing for those who absorb the content of the book - Revelation 1:3
2. A blessing for those who die in the Lord - Revelation 14:13
3. A blessing for those who are alert in the Tribulation regarding the Second Advent - Revelation 16:15
4. A blessing for those who attend the marriage supper of the Lamb - Revelation 19:9
5. A blessing for those who are part of the first resurrection - Revelation 20:6
6. A blessing for those who keep the content of the book - Revelation 22:7
7. A special blessing for those who will have eternal blessings in heaven. - Revelation 22:14

2. WHERE IS HEAVEN?

The Bible does not specifically say where Heaven is. However we are told that Heaven is above us. The most detailed account of this is in Acts 1:1-11.

The Lord Jesus Christ ascended (or was taken up) in full view of the apostles:

v9: And when He had spoken these things, while they beheld, He was taken up, and a cloud received Him out of their sight.

They must have been so amazed by this supernatural event (who wouldn't be?) that they kept looking steadfastly up toward Heaven as recorded in the next verse:

v10: And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold two men stood by them in white apparel,

The word "steadfast" means to "stare intently."

A thinking person would ask, "Was this account written by some fool or madman? Who wrote this?" The answer is Luke, the same person who wrote the Gospel of Luke. So what? Luke was a medical doctor, a physician. Luke was also a historian. He was a very detailed man. He made it a point to verify his facts from original written sources and by interviewing actual eyewitnesses. (See Luke 1:1-4.)

The Zondervan Pictorial Encyclopedia of the Bible describes Luke as “the first university trained medical missionary” and that “modern research has vindicated the quality of his work.” (Volume 3, page 999).

Also God has seen fit to preserve this account through two thousand years of attack. Believers can look forward to this fact of going up to our heavenly home. You can also praise God that somewhere, right now, Heaven is a real place, where Jesus is preparing a place for you.

If Jesus prepares mansions for each and every believer in Heaven, then Heaven is where Jesus is.

John 14:3 says:

“And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.”

The Lord Jesus was consoling and reassuring the anxious disciples. He is saying that in the future world, they will be with Him. This is all that He tells them about heaven. For the disciples this was enough. How about you?

The repentant thief who was dying on the cross next to Jesus was told **“Today shalt thou be with me in paradise.”** (Luke 23:43). Heaven is where Jesus is.

The apostle Paul expressed this same truth in 2 Corinthians 5:8.

We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body and to be present with the Lord.

And in Philippians 1:23.

For I am in a strait betwixt the two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better.

For the apostle Paul, Heaven meant being with Jesus Christ. The New Testament teaches that believers go to be with Christ. The Lord Jesus descended from His home in glory in Heaven to earth, and we know that He returned to Heaven after His victorious resurrection. Therefore, we should always link the place of Heaven with being present with the Lord Jesus Christ. Also, God’s Word clearly teaches that Heaven is accessible only through the Lord Jesus Christ, He is the only way to Heaven.

John 14:6. **Jesus saith to him, “I am the way, the truth and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.”**

Notice the clarity. Jesus did not say, “I am a way, a truth and a life.” He did not say, “I am a way to the Father”!

This is one verse that clearly separates true Christianity from every other religion on the face of the Earth, including the Christian religion.

What is the difference between Christianity and a Christian religion?

Simply put, Christianity is accepting in faith that Jesus Christ died on the cross to pay for your sins and make you right with God in Heaven. You choose to accept Him as Lord and Saviour. After this the new believer has a living, personal relationship with Jesus Christ that grows in obedience and matures during the life of the believer. It is this simple act of faith and trust that “saves” a sinner and gives them access to Heaven, just like the thief on the cross next to Jesus did. That same thief is now in Heaven with Jesus.

The Christian religion teaches that man must get to Heaven by his own good works and deeds, or by following certain rituals and saying certain prayers. Religion is man made and completely bypasses God’s free gift of payment for sin by the death of Jesus Christ on the cross. If you were to ask a religious Christian if they were going to Heaven, they wouldn’t know the answer. Ask a true “born from above” believer who is having a personal relationship with Jesus Christ, growing in the grace and knowledge of Him, and they will give you a definite YES! answer.

John 3:16. **“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son that whoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.”**

Acts 4:12. **“Neither is there salvation in any other, for there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.”**

Acts 16:31. **So they said, “believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.”**

Ephesians 2:8,9. **For by grace are ye saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, not of works, lest any man should boast.**

What does God think of our good works?

Isaiah 64:6. **But we are all as an unclean *thing*, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.**

Sadly, there are countless numbers of souls in the Christian religion who will not be entering Heaven. Instead Jesus will say to them as recorded in Matthew 7:21-23:

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

If you are a member of a Christian religion, or an unbeliever, I urge you to consider these scriptures, and study what the Bible teaches about salvation through "good works" and decide for yourself if you will be going to Heaven.

Remember this one verse in Romans 3:10. **As it is written; "There is none righteous, no, not one."**

In other words, there has never been a righteous human in the whole of human history. Since the fall of Adam, every person has been born into sin. The only place where there is no sin is Heaven.

Jesus wants you to be in Heaven, that's why He died in your place for your sins that He did not commit. He (the innocent) died for you (the guilty) because He loves you, and you are precious to Him.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: ASCENSION AND SESSION

1. The resurrection body of Christ was capable of 'space travel', The humanity of Christ in resurrection travelled through all three heavens. (John 20:17). (1st Heaven - the atmosphere, 2nd Heaven - Stellar Space, 3rd Heaven - the Throne Room of God).

2. The purpose of this space travel was to arrive in a human body at the throne room of God the Father. Although covered with no protective space suit, the resurrection body did not burn up as it travelled through the universe, it did not suffer fatigue but arrived in perfect condition (Romans 8:34, Colossians 3:1, Hebrews 1:3, 8:1, 10:12, 12:2).

Upon his arrival, the Father said "sit down at my right hand" (Psalm 110:1, Hebrews 1:13). Deity does not sit, only Christ's humanity sat down. This indicated the acceptability of the humanity of Christ (Ephesians 1:20) and guarantees the acceptability of regenerate mankind (Ephesians 2:6)-

The seating or session of Christ declared Him superior to all angels, elect or fallen (1 Peter 3:22). Today believers are positionally higher than angels but in the resurrection body believers will be physically superior to angels.

This is why God gives every believer at least one angelic servant - to some many more - a down payment that we will be one day superior to them (Hebrews 1:14). Who made this possible? Jesus Christ through ascension and session.

3. The ascension and session of the humanity of Christ produced victory in the angelic conflict. (Hebrews 1:3-13).

4. The ascension begins a new stage of the angelic conflict (Ephesians 1:20-22), 4:7-10). Hence the believer of the Church age is involved in the intensification of the angelic conflict.

5. The ascension and session begins the subjection of his enemies (Psalm 110:1) as quoted in (Luke 20:42-43, Acts 2:33-34, Hebrews 1:13).

6. The second advent of Christ will conclude the subjection process (Daniel 7:13, 14, Zechariah 13:2, Colossians 2:15, Revelation 20:1-3)

7. The ascension and session also completes the glorification of Christ. (Acts 2:33, Philippians 2:9, 1 Peter 3:22)

8. The ascension explains the uniqueness of the Church Age. (John 7:37-39)

9. With Jesus Christ now in heaven, He has given His Spirit to indwell us on earth. (John 7:37-39)

10. Seated at the right hand of the Father, Jesus now ministers as our great high priest (Hebrews 7:23-25)

CHRIST: SACRIFICE OF CHRIST

The sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross had many affects. It was

- | | |
|-------------------|--|
| 1. Penal | Galatians 3:13 2 Corinthians 5:21 |
| 2. Substitutional | Leviticus 1:4 Isaiah 53:5-6 2 Corinthians 5:21 1 Peter 2:24 |
| 3. Voluntary | Genesis 22:9 John 10:18 |
| 4. Redemptive | Galatians 3:13 Ephesians 1:7 1 Corinthians 6:20 |
| 5. Propitiatory | Romans 3:25 1 John 2:2 |
| 6. Reconciling | 2 Corinthians 5:18,19 Colossians 1:21,22 |
| 7. Efficacious | John 12:3 20-23 Romans 5:9,10 2 Corinthians 5:21 Ephesians 2:13 Hebrews 9:12 |
| 8. Revelatory | John 3:16 1 John 4:9,10 |

SALVATION

1. Salvation is the gift of God by grace through faith.
2. We cannot work for salvation - we must receive it as a gift. (Ephesians 2:8, 9, Romans 4:4-5)
3. The only means of salvation is by trusting that Jesus Christ died for your sins, was buried and raised from the dead. He therefore paid the penalty for sin, and conquered death. (Acts 16:30-31, John 3:16, 14:6, 1 Corinthians 15:3-4)
4. We are saved so that we can serve God. (Ephesians 2:8-10) Our good works show that we have been saved.
5. Salvation includes many other doctrines such as Imputation, Justification, Redemption, Propitiation, Reconciliation and Sanctification.

RELIGION

1. Satan's religion is a humanly acceptable one: no sin, no judgment, no Saviour and no Hell. Satan appears as an angel of light. (2 Corinthians 11:13-19,26)
2. Many pastors in the churches are servants of Satan's policy, knowingly or unknowingly. (Isaiah 30:12, Jeremiah 2:8, 2 Peter 2:1-10)
3. Satan's strategy towards unbelievers is to keep them blinded to the gospel. (2 Corinthians 4:3-4, Colossians 2:8, 2 Thessalonians 2:9-10)
4. Satan's strategy towards believers is:-
 - a) To confuse by false teaching. (Matthew 7:15, Romans 16:18)
 - b) To appeal to pride. (2 Corinthians 10:12)
 - c) To promote idolatry. (Habakkuk 2:18,19)
 - d) To promote legalism. (1 Timothy 1:7-8)
5. Satan's policy calls for counterfeit faith:-
 - a) Counterfeit gospel. (2 Corinthians 11:3-4)
 - b) Counterfeit pastors. (2 Corinthians 11:13-15)
 - c) Counterfeit communion. (1 Corinthians 10:19-21)
 - d) Counterfeit doctrine. (2 Timothy 4:1)
 - e) Counterfeit righteousness. (Matthew 19:16-28)
 - f) Counterfeit way of life. (Matthew 23)
 - g) Counterfeit power. (2 Thessalonians 2:8-10)
 - h) Counterfeit gods. (2 Thessalonians 2:3-4)

3. WHAT IS HEAVEN LIKE?

Have you ever wondered about this? In this section we will explore what the Bible reveals about Heaven.

Some of the most common questions are:

1. Will I see my loved ones again?
2. Do babies and children go to Heaven when they die?
3. What will our homes be like?
4. What will we do there?
5. Will we have a body?
6. Will we still have our emotions?
7. Will there be nature in Heaven?
8. Will I see my dead pet in Heaven?
9. Will we eat in Heaven?
10. If time is non-existent in Heaven, how old will I be?

The answers to these questions will really challenge our frail human minds. To put things in context we need to remember the following:

- We only know and comprehend time and space.
- We are studying something that is outside our dimension of time and space. Although our understanding may be limited, we can be absolutely sure that the Bible is the only reliable source of knowledge about eternity and Heaven.
- God reveals what He wants us to know from the Bible. This is called "Divine Revelation".

The Apostle Paul wrote under inspiration from the Holy Spirit:

1 Corinthians 13:12 **For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.**

In other words, we are limited here on earth, but in Heaven all will be made clear to us. Heaven is an addition to all that is good, not a subtraction.

Now to the answers!

3.1 WILL I SEE MY LOVED ONES AGAIN?

Yes we will, if they were believers in the Lord Jesus Christ. And they will know us too! The relationships that we enjoy with our Christian brothers and sisters will be made perfect in Heaven because there is no sin in Heaven. Heaven is a perfect place.

We will also know people who we did not meet on earth. We will meet all the saints in the Bible. The Lord will reveal to us the person who prayed for us, or who said something to us, who gave money for a special need. This is what the Bible teaches.

For example Lazarus and the rich man as recorded in Luke 16:19-31. Focus on verses 22 and 23.

V22. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;

V23. And in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

Key Words.

"Abraham's bosom" was a well known Jewish expression for Heaven. It specifically referred to the happiness of being in Heaven.

"saw". In the Hebrew this word means to stare, implying the ability to discern clearly. So the rich man was able to see and recognize Lazarus clearly even though there was a great distance between them.

Not only will we recognize and be with our loved ones forever, but also unbelievers will look up from Hell and see the utter joy and happiness of the occupants of Heaven, which will add to their pain, torture and anguish for ever and ever.

Can people in Heaven see their loved ones in Hell? There is no direct indication that they can. It is not stated specifically that Lazarus looked down and saw the rich man in torments.

However, we do know that sadness will be unknown in Heaven from Revelation 7:17.

For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

If there were sadness in Heaven, for whatever reason, then it would not be Heaven anymore.

We can therefore infer that we will not be able to see those we loved on earth in Hell, and that we may not even remember them, because of the overwhelming joy and happiness we will be experiencing in the company of the Lord Jesus.

One can ask the question "how do I know that I can recognize my loved ones in Heaven, even if I have not met them?"

Two accounts, both backed up by eye witnesses, indicate that the living on Earth were able to recognize people in their heavenly bodies.

1 Samuel 28:11,12:

Then said the woman, Whom shall I bring up unto thee? And he said, Bring me up Samuel.

1Sa 28:12 **And when the woman saw Samuel, she cried with a loud voice: and the woman spoke to Saul, saying, Why hast thou deceived me? for thou art Saul.**

These verses clearly indicate that the witch saw literally, with her own eyes, Samuel and recognized him. She was also surprised by his appearance.

More powerful evidence is given in the eyewitness account of the Transfiguration in Matthew 17:1-9. Notice verses 3 and 4:

Mat 17:3 **And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elijah talking with him.**

Mat 17:4 **Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.**

Notice that Peter recognized Moses and Elijah, even though he could not have possibly met them on Earth! If Peter could do this, so could James and John.

By this same supernatural means, we will be able to recognize all our loved ones in Heaven, even people who we knew about, but never met on Earth.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: TRANSFIGURATION

1. The transfiguration scene is given in Matthew 17:1-9 and is a representation of the Second Advent and coming kingdom of the Lord - the Millennium.
2. On the mount was the Lord in his resurrection body. (Matthew 17:2)
3. Moses in his resurrection body represents all the saints who have died.
4. Elijah in his resurrection body represents all the saints who have been translated. (1 Corinthians 15:50-53, 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18)
5. Peter, James and John in their natural bodies depict the regenerate of Israel entering into the Millennial Kingdom in their natural bodies to re-populate the earth.
6. The multitude at the base of the mountain represent Gentile believers who also enter into the Millennial Kingdom. (Isaiah 11:10-12)

RESURRECTION OF OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS

1. This resurrection takes place at the Second Advent.
 2. The body of David was still in his tomb according to Peter on the day of Pentecost. (Acts 2:25-29) David's body could not have then been resurrected in the scene of Matthew 27:51, 52.
 3. Under the concept of Daniel 12:13, Isaiah 26:19, 20 the resurrection of the Old Testament saints is related to the second advent of Jesus Christ.
 4. The dispensation of Israel is not yet completed, the resurrection occurs at the end of a dispensation, the end of the dispensation of Israel - Second Advent. The Age of Gentiles ended with Abraham's call but the saints from that era did not get their resurrection bodies because Jesus Christ had not received his, the first fruits. (1 Corinthians 15:20)
 5. The two witnesses of Revelation 11:3-13 are Moses and Elijah and they could not be killed if they had received resurrection bodies. (Revelation 11:7, 8).
- Moses and Elijah therefore have not received their resurrection bodies by the middle of the Tribulation. Matthew 27:52-53 is a transfer scene not a resurrection scene. The transfer is one of saints from paradise to the third heaven of Ephesians 4-8. Some were given resuscitated bodies to witness to the Jews.
6. The Abrahamic, Davidic, Palestinian and New Covenants are not fulfilled till the second advent of Christ. The resurrection of Israel corresponds to the fulfilment of these four unconditional covenants.

CHRIST - ANGEL OF JEHOVAH

1. The Angel of Jehovah is identified as Jehovah (Genesis 16:7-13, 22:11-18, 31:11-13, Exodus 13:21 cf 14:19, Judges 6:11-23).
2. The Angel of Jehovah is distinguished from Jehovah (Genesis 24:7, Exodus 23:20, 1 Chronicles 21:15-18, Zechariah 1:12-13).
3. The Angel of Jehovah is therefore a member of the Trinity - the same as Jehovah, but distinct from Jehovah.
4. God the Father and Holy Spirit cannot be seen by man face to face (Exodus 33:18-23; John 14:17).
5. Therefore, the Angel of Jehovah is the second Person of the Trinity: the pre-incarnate Lord Jesus Christ.
 - a) Jesus Christ identifies Himself as Jehovah (I AM) (John 8:58)
 - b) The Lord Jesus Christ is the visible/manifest member of the Trinity (John 1:18, 6:46, 1 Timothy 6:15-16).
 - c) The Angel of Jehovah never appears after the Incarnation (John 1:18, 6:46, 1 Timothy 6:15, 16, 1 John 4:12)
 - d) Both the Angel of Jehovah and Jesus Christ are sent by Jehovah (the Father).
6. The Angel of Jehovah appeared only in the Old Testament.
 - a) He wrestled with Jacob. (Genesis 32:24-30)
 - b) He redeemed Jacob from all evil. (Genesis 48:16)
 - c) He spoke to Moses from the burning bush. (Exodus 3:2)
 - d) He protected Israel at the Red Sea (Exodus 14:19)
 - e) He prepared Israel for the Promised Land. (Exodus 23:20-23)
 - f) He reassured Joshua (Joshua 5:13-15)
 - g) He commissioned Gideon (Judges 6:11-23)
 - h) He ministered to Elijah. (1 Kings 19:5-7)
 - i) He saved Jerusalem from Sennacherib. (Isaiah 37:36)
 - j) He preserved Shadrach, Meshech and Abednego in the furnace. (Daniel 3:25)

ANGELS – MEDIATORS OF REVELATION

Many times revelations from God were mediated through angels -

- [i] The Law of Moses -, Exodus 3:2 , Galatians 3:19, Acts 7:53, Hebrews 2:2
- [ii] Prophetic announcements to Daniel - Daniel 7:16, 8:16-26, 9:20-27, 10:1-12:13
- [iii] Prophetic announcements to Zechariah - Zechariah 1:9, 2:3, 4:1,5, 5:5, 6:4,5
- [iv] Announcement of the Birth of John to Zacharias - Luke 1:11-20
- [v] Announcement of the Birth of Jesus to Mary - Luke 1:26-38, and Joseph - Matthew 1:20-21

ANGELS: DEMONS

1. Occult practices such as astrology, divination and spiritism are condemned by the scriptures (Leviticus 19:31; Deuteronomy 18:9-12). This was punishable by death in Israel. (Leviticus 20:27)
2. Demonism has exercised much influence in history (Ezekiel 21:21, Daniel 10:13). Evil is associated with the rule of demon possessed kings. (2 Kings 21:1-17)
3. The judgment of demons involved the destruction of demon possessed people and religious systems associated with idolatry (Isaiah 19:1-3, cf Deuteronomy 7:5)
4. Many nations have been destroyed for demon practices.
 - a) Canaanites (Deuteronomy 18:9-12)
 - b) Babylonians (Isaiah 46:1-7, 47:1-15)
 - c) The judgment of Egypt's first born included the judgment of demons (Exodus 12:12)
5. The return of nations to the battle of Armageddon is by demon influence (Revelation 16:13-16).
6. Satan and the occult forces will be imprisoned during the Millennium (Isaiah 24:21-23; Revelation 20:1-3).
7. Demons are called "hairy ones" (Leviticus 17:7), destroyers (Deuteronomy 32:17) and demons.
8. Demons
 - a) seek to possess men or animals (Mark 5:1-13).
 - b) deceive man into false doctrines (1 Timothy 4:1).
 - c) believe and tremble (James 2:19).
 - d) speak both truth and lies (2 Chronicles 18:21; Acts 16:17-18).
9. Satan rules the demon world (Matthew 12:24-28). Demons have a hierarchy (Daniel 10:12,13,20; Ephesians 6:12).
10. Sacrificing to idols is worship of demons (Deuteronomy 32:17, Psalm 106:36-38, 1 Corinthians 10:19-21).
11. The following activities can lead to demon possession (for the unbeliever) or demon influence (for the believer):
 - a) Submission to demons through idolatry (1 Corinthians 10:19-21) and occult practices such as mental telepathy, clairvoyance and spiritism (Deuteronomy 18:9-12).
 - b) Specific dedication of one's body to demons, such as the Hindu soma and shamanism.
 - c) Any practice in which you "lose control" of your mind and senses, such as drugs and alcohol (Galatians 5:20, the Greek word for "sorcery" is "pharmakeia"), meditation and trances, hypnotic rhythms in music and dance.
 - d) Sexual cults, such as the asherah (Judges 6:25-28, 2 Kings 21:3)
12. When people reject God, He may allow Satan and demons to administer discipline, even death (John 8:44, 1 Corinthians 5:5, 1 Timothy 3:6-7).
13. Demon influence can cause abnormal psychological behaviour, physical strength, sickness, etc (Mark 5:1-5, Job 2:6-8)
14. Jesus Christ has conquered all demon power (Matthew 10:8).

HELL AND HADES

1. HELL is from the Greek GEHENNA. This was a place where children were burned as offerings to Molech. (2 Chronicles 33:6, Jeremiah 7:31). Molech was a huge idol with outstretched paws on which the children were tied prior to being burnt to death.
2. HELL is the same as the Lake of Fire where the lost spend eternity. (Revelation 19:20, 20:10)
3. Hades (Gk) in the New Testament is often translated HELL. SHEOL (Heb) is the Old Testament equivalent. Hades and Sheol are in the centre of the earth, cf. Saul, Samuel (from Paradise or Abraham's Bosom) and the Witch of Endor. (1 Samuel 28:7-19) Hades or Sheol is the place of the souls and spirits of people who died while awaiting the resurrection. Hades is also the place of imprisonment of a certain group of angels - TARTARUS.
4. HADES is divided into three sections, one section being divided from the other two by a "Great Gulf Fixed". (Luke 16:19-31)

It should be noted that the story of Lazarus is a true story, and not a parable, because it mentions proper names (Lazarus) and a geographical location - Hades.)

- a) Abraham's Bosom or Paradise - The abode of the saved until the ascension of Jesus Christ. The Lord said to the repentant thief - "This day shall thou be with me in Paradise. (Luke 23:43)
- b) Torments - The abode of the unsaved, reserved until the last judgment at the end of the millennium. This is a place of great sorrow and suffering. (Revelation 20:13)
- c) Tartarus - The prison of fallen angels who kept not their first estate. These are fallen angels from Genesis 6. This is a place of imprisonment (2 Peter 2:4)

5. Since the ascension of Christ - Paradise has been empty, with the saved being transferred to the Third Heaven. (2 Corinthians 12:1-4, Ephesians 4:7-10)

6. Those who die now as believers go directly to the Third Heaven ("at home with the Lord"), with soul and spirit but no resurrection body. (2 Corinthians 5:8)

7. Those in Hades (Torments) will be brought before the Great White Throne after which they will be thrown into the Lake of Fire. (Revelation 20:13-15). This is the Last Judgment.

8. Hades is in the heart of the earth. (Matthew 12:40; 1 Samuel 28:7-15)

9. There are no degrees of punishment in the Lake of Fire.

- a) Degrees of punishment tend to deny the literal lake of fire. Nothing to indicate the temperature of the lake of fire is not constant.
- b) Degrees of punishment is contrary to the doctrine of unlimited atonement. Christ died for every sin that has ever been committed. Man is not judged on the basis of his sins but human good. (Revelation 20:11-15)
- c) Degrees of punishment destroys the principle of salvation. Its concept is that one rejecter of grace gets less fire than another rejecter of grace. The unsaved are unsaved because they reject grace.
- d) Degrees of punishment is based on the theory that for a thesis there is an antithesis and when they come together you have synthesis (the Hegelian fallacy).
- e) False concept:- One person commits a bad sin, one person performs a marvellous good work. Obviously there must be different degrees of punishment in eternity.

3.2 DO BABIES AND CHILDREN GO TO HEAVEN WHEN THEY DIE?

Matthew 19:14. But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

The Lord Jesus Christ corrected the disciples for stopping children running to Him. Have you noticed that children are more accepting about God than adults? The lesson is that if a child wants to found out more about Jesus Christ, or even decide they want to receive Jesus, then they should be encouraged and not told they are too young.

However the phrase "for of such is the kingdom of Heaven" shows that children who die before the age of accountability do go to Heaven. See also Mark 10:14-16 and Luke 18:16,17.

King David also testified of this when his first-born son to Bathsheba died as a baby.

2 Samuel 12:23. "But now he is dead wherefore should I fast? Can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me."

David said, "I shall go to him" and this is something that every believer who is a parent can look forward to.

We also know that all children who die tragically in car crashes, accidents, abortions, natural disasters and disease are now with the Lord enjoying eternal peace, happiness and joy with Him. This promise also includes people who are mentally handicapped and unable to reason.

Special Note: Luke 1:15; Luke 1:41; Luke 1:44. These verses about John the Baptist prove that a fetus has a soul. All babies who are the victims of abortions, or who have died by other causes while still in the womb, during the whole time of human history, will form a huge portion of Heaven's population.

So when does a child stop being a child? The Bible teaches that every person has an "age of accountability".

What is the age of accountability? This is the age when a child can recognize sin. Therefore this point of time will vary from person to person because we are all different. There is a point where salvation must be accepted personally. The age of accountability is shown by the rich young ruler talking with Jesus.

DOCTRINES

RICH YOUNG RULER

1. The Rich Young Ruler shows a noble attempting to gain the favour of God by keeping the law.

2. General Scripture Matthew 19:16-22

3. Evaluation:

v 16 Good Master he says - notice the Rich Young Ruler does not call Jesus Lord.

What good things can I do to inherit eternal life - notice the emphasis on self.

In v 17 Jesus shows that one can only be saved by keeping the requirements of the Law, and mentions a number of the commandments - (Numbers 6, 7, 8 & 9), including loving his neighbour as himself (Leviticus 19:18).

In v 21 Jesus says to him, "If you will be perfect sell what you have and give to the poor.

But the rich young ruler is not willing to do this.

4. Principle: -

People are not saved by selling possessions and giving them to the poor. Jesus is showing that the rich young ruler loves his riches more than God and more than his neighbours. He therefore does not keep the Law, and falls short of the righteousness of God.

Jesus then states that it is more difficult for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of Heaven than a camel through the eye of a needle (v 24). The rich tend to rely on their riches, rather than God. Man cannot provide his own salvation.

5. Summary on the Rich Young Ruler:

a) The rich young ruler did not recognise Jesus as the Son of God.

b) The rich young ruler wished to be saved by keeping the law - no one can be saved by keeping the law.

c) The rich young ruler said that he had kept these all from the **age of accountability**. Jesus proved to him that there was one which he had not kept.

d) Since the rich young ruler had not kept this commandment he was guilty of all (James 2:10).

e) Ultimately the problem of the rich young ruler was that he failed to fully trust in the Lord (Matthew 19:28).

6. The Solution "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and you shall be saved" (Acts 16:31).

GOD: DIVINE INSTITUTIONS - FREEWILL

1. Definition :- Volition or free will is the responsibility before God to choose different ends and means in life.

2. The above definition does not say that one has the power to do what you choose but it does give the opportunity to choose.

3. God gave Adam a choice in the garden in (Genesis 2:16,17) where God told the man "thou shalt not eat" in the imperative mood which is a command.

4. Free will gives you the opportunity to want to accomplish things in conformity with God's will without having the natural ability to do so. (1 Kings 3:5-10) Solomon in this case wanted to judge but could not because of his own limitations.

5. In (Psalm 13) David's free will continued to be positive even though he had not been successful.

6. One of the reasons for the delay in the answering of prayer requests is to allow the strengthening of free will to desire to do God's will.

7. Free will in both believer and unbeliever. (John 7:17)

8. Free will in giving. (2 Corinthians 8:12)

9. Free will cannot be coerced or compromised thus Christianity is a matter of obedience. (2 Corinthians 5:10)

10 As God is to judge all men it means that man is responsible for his actions and that all normal members of the human race have free will. (Revelation 20:11-15)

11. Relationship of free will is vertical, between man and God not man and man. (Ephesians 6:5-9)

12. Because man is subject to judgment there is an age of accountability as portrayed by the "rich young ruler".

13. Animals and plants are not judged.

14. Free will also puts the responsibility on both ends and means. An example of the right end but wrong means is the sin unto death of Moses. (Numbers 20)

15. By application just because God is blessing a ministry, in the case of Moses by providing water it does not mean that the person is necessarily in God's will. God blesses through his grace and not necessarily because they are doing things by God's way.

16. Human viewpoint attack on free will - Determinism.

- (a) The concept is that if one starts out with any physical item and I know everything there is regarding it and the laws that control it then I can dogmatically predict the future state of that item.
- (b) This concept is incorrect as shown by the power of prayer (James 5:17).
- (c) It is possible for God to manipulate His universe. (Acts 16:26).

17. Types of miracles in the bible

- (a) natural - a variation of a natural law
 - (i) Elijah and the drought
 - (ii) Paul and the earthquake
- (iii) Moses at the Red Sea with the east wind
 - (b) supernatural - a direct violation of a natural law
 - (i) The resurrection of Christ
 - (ii) Being born again

18. In physics this concept is called "Heisenburg's Uncertainty Principle" after the German Nobel prize winner who postulated it. Modern science now views a lot of the formulae of physics as occurring the vast majority of times but on odd occasions not complying with observed laws. Such non compliance would include miracles or manipulation by God.

19. Evolution is an attack on free will as it states that man is evolved from animals and is a higher form of animal. This is often reinforced in text books which state "men and the other animals" indicating that man differs in degree only and not in "kind".

- (a) "Difference in degree" - hot and cold is a matter of relative heat; ice, water and steam are all water and of the same kind.
- (b) "Difference in kind" - a square and a triangle.
- (c) Solomon in (Ecclesiastes 3:21), a believer out of fellowship assesses man as different only in degree from animals.
- (d) Based on evolutionary principles abortion can be justified and atrocities condoned against other races such as the Nazi reaction to Jews, gypsies and the Slavs. From this comes the concept that if we knew everything about animal behaviour we could then describe man.
- (e) The Biblical view however is that we do vary in kind, not in degree (Genesis 2:16) with the thing that sets man apart from the animals being volition.
- (f) By implication man is never totally determined by his environment.
- (g) Hell is a monument to the fact of free will because if you do not have a choice you cannot be judged.

20. Three problems which the Bible solves regarding free will -

- (a) What about babies who die before they hear the gospel or those who are mentally not able to decide ?

Solution - (2 Samuel 12:18) where a child born to David and Bathsheba dies on the 7th day, the day before circumcision which would have brought the child into a covenant relationship.

David says that he will go to be with the child indicating the child has been automatically saved without a covenant requirement.

This is the principle of "unlimited atonement". (1 John 2:2)

- (b) What about the physical damage which hinders the person causing a restriction of free will ?

Solution - (John 9:1-7) where a man blind from birth is healed. Jesus did not bypass the free will but made up for the blindness. He breaks down the barriers for a person to do God's will but the free will of the person is not manipulated.

- (c) What about spiritual damage to free will ?

Solution - (Genesis 3:8) where after the fall God sought out Adam and Eve in the garden where they had hidden from him. God who is all knowing asked the question "Where are you ?"

The principle of the "total depravity of man" is seen here in the fact that man will not of his own free will seek God.

In (Deuteronomy 5) Moses and all the Israelites heard a public address by God which the Israelites shrank back from.

God speaks to man in three areas:-

- (a) He speaks to all men. (Matthew 5:45, Acts 14:17)
- (b) He has a more intense form of calling. (Genesis 6:3, Romans 13:1)
- (c) He calls through the gospel of Jesus Christ. (John 16:8-11)

It is however possible to so damage the free will regarding spiritual matters that it becomes impossible to believe or repent.

Examples

- (a) the Amorites and Canaanites of Joshua's day. (Genesis 15:16)
- (b) the Pharaoh of the Exodus. (Exodus 7- 11)
- (c) those who accept the mark of the beast. (Revelation 13:8)
- (d) the reaction of unbelievers at the second advent. (Revelation 6:16)

21. However there are many areas over which even those who have had limited free will have control and the person who searches will find. (John 7:17)

22. If God is truly sovereign how can man have genuine free choice? God has absolute sovereignty as shown by a study of His character. It is also clear that man has free will. God uses his free will as creator whilst man uses his as a part of creation.

23. One way of looking at this is fatalism which is the basis of most eastern religions which state that man's destiny is set and certain.

24. Another way is autonomy which says that all things are uncertain and therefore history goes on chaotically.

25. True biblical sovereignty is based on the creator/creation concept with the creator outside the universe and the created beings within.

Three non salvation examples:-

(a) Paul as a prisoner on a ship bound for Rome predicts, having received advice from the angel of God, that there will be no loss of life but the ship will become a wreck. The guarantee is a sovereign guarantee and therefore absolute. Paul however tells the soldiers that they must stay on the boat to be saved. They do and they are saved. Sovereign decrees by God therefore contain free will decisions by man. (Acts 27)

(b) The sovereign decree is that all things work together for good towards the goal of predestination and eventual glorification. We have a guarantee that we will be in heaven. We need to be actively involved in the chain of events. (Romans 8:28)

(c) Daniel understood the time of "desolations" as seventy years as prophesied by Jeremiah and knew that it would end on time. He now seeks by supplication with sackcloth and ashes forgiveness for Israel's sin on the basis that no discipline is going to be removed without the sin having been forgiven. (Daniel 9:2)
God promises certain things but they are contingent on our prayer Using the principle of the sovereignty of God we can be confident in prayer if we are controlled by the Holy Spirit. (James 4:2)

26. Can free will be neutral ? The answer is no, one is either positive or negative towards God. For instance if a young man is keen on a girl and is asked if he is going to marry her and he answers he does not know. As long as he debates the question he will not marry her and is therefore negative to marriage.

27. Every attack in the Christian life has one common feature, the denial of the Word of God as shown in the temptation of our Lord. Each of them therefore is an attack on the character of God.

28. The act of negative free will to the plan of God is given in (Romans 1:18-32.)

In this passage:-

- (a) the unbeliever hold the truth in unrighteousness. (v18)
- (b) the power of God is clearly seen by all men. (v19-20)
- (c) they became vain in their imaginations and worshipped part of the creation rather than the creator. (v21-23)
- (d) the result is sexual and other perversions. (v24-31)
- (e) they end up encouraging others to defy God. (v32)

29. Are the majority always right ? A scriptural example of this was Elijah and the prophets of Baal in (1 Kings 18) where on a public opinion basis Elijah would have been considered wrong. The concept that public opinion is always correct comes from the French philosopher Rousseau who stated "the most general will is always the most just also, the voice of the people is in fact the voice of God". Another good example of this would be the public opinion that happened at the crucifixion of Christ.

30. There are therefore two classes in the Christian life, positive or negative to God's will.

31. In Old Testament times physical idols were common. The idols nowadays are commonly abstract in the form of ideas and concepts. It is up to the Christian to challenge these concepts where they occur.

3.3 WHAT WILL OUR HOMES BE LIKE?

I have some exciting news for you! John 14:2 says:

Jesus said; “In my Father’s house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

Key Words.

mansions, "mone", can be translated abiding places, areas of occupancy. It is not only used for a house but a vast estate of hundreds of thousands of acres. In the context of heaven it is likely to relate to a vast area. I go to prepare a place for you, says the Lord.

place, "topis", is an administrative district, a province, a region. It is a province in the empire, a large tract of land. It is an area with many cities and a large population. In the greatness of God's creation God has vast real estate for us. What God has for us has not been fully comprehended yet. It is not the cosiness or smallness of God's provision but eternal security, vastness and glory of His provision in eternity that the Lord challenges us with here.

This word has also been interpreted in the light of Roman culture. Apparently, the conquering heroes of the Roman Army were rewarded with mansions to live out the rest of their lives in. These mansions were just what we would imagine them to be, luxurious, spacious and tailored to the personalities and tastes of the people who lived in them.

prepare. Means to adapt to one’s character and needs. It is a process of adapting a soul to Heaven and of Heaven to a soul, which The Lord Jesus Christ is in the process of doing right now! (Alleged Discrepancies of the Bible, page 417.)

How exciting this promise of mansions is for any soul who is a soldier for the Lord Jesus Christ here on earth! We know that Jesus Christ is faithful and therefore we can accept His promise as fact.

But there is still another facet to our eternal home. It is called the New Jerusalem. The Book of Revelation contains some data about New Jerusalem.

This is an area of study that deserves its own space. Therefore the following is a brief summary about the New Jerusalem.

NOTE: For further details please see “The New Jerusalem” study topic.

The Book of Revelation describes the city as being extremely large.

- We will be able to enjoy perfect freedom.
- We will have endless opportunities to relax and enjoy relationships with all our saved loved ones and also all the other saints whom we never knew while on earth.
- We will be able to visit the new earth whenever we want, and totally enjoy all of God’s creation.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: FAITHFULNESS OF CHRIST

1. Christ is immutable (includes stability); he is absolutely stable/dependable in his character. Hebrews 13:8
2. Principle of faithfulness if found in Lamentations. 3:21-24.
3. The promises that believers can claim in this life (one day at a time) are based on Christ's faithfulness. Hebrews 10:23
4. Christ is faithful to us in testing, never pushing us too far. 1 Corinthians 10:13
5. Faithfulness of Christ is the basis of human stability; we can be secure because we take our life from Him. 2 Thessalonians 3:3
6. Christ is faithful even when we are unfaithful. 2 Timothy 2:13
7. Christ if faithful to the Father in execution of the Divine Plan.

3.4 WHAT WILL WE DO THERE?

In Heaven, everything will be perfect, because God Himself is perfect. The Bible indicates that we will enjoy eternal life characterized by joy, worship and purposeful activities.

Before Adam fell, he enjoyed eternal life in a perfect environment. He walked and talked with God daily in the Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve did not have to work for their food. Adam was extremely intelligent because he named all the animals. They enjoyed what we would call a perfect lifestyle. This description gives us a good idea of what Heaven will be like for us.

In Heaven we will be able to explore all the gifts and talents that God has given us. Also we will be able to pursue all our interests. We have all eternity at our disposal. If you think you will be bored in Heaven you could not be more wrong! However we will not know everything in Heaven. We will never stop learning, but will never reach God's status of knowing everything either. Omniscience is a characteristic reserved for God only.

Most importantly, our work will consist of serving the Lord Jesus Christ.

Revelation 7:15 says:

“Therefore they are before the throne of God, and serve Him day and night in His temple. And He who sits on the throne will dwell among them.”

Revelation 22:3-6.

- 3. And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and His servants shall serve Him:**
- 4. And they shall see His face; and His name *shall be* on their foreheads.**
- 5. And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign forever and ever.**
- 6. And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent His angel to show unto His servants the things which must shortly be done.**

These verses show that we will serve God and reign with Him forever. While our home will be in New Jerusalem, we will also be able to visit the new Earth to rule with Christ. Not only will we be serving in the Lord's government, but we may also teach, guide, build and supply leadership. This will be our purposeful activity, without the curse of pain and frustration and tiredness we have now.

In Heaven we will see Christ completely for the first time. 1 John 3:2 says:

“Beloved , now we are the sons of God; and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that when He shall appear, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is.

And when we see the Lord Jesus we will be overcome with love and admiration and an intense desire to please and serve Him. In other words, we will worship Him. We will worship God basking in the full display of His perfections.

Remember that God's purpose for His children is stated in Ephesians 1:4.

“Just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love.”

The cleansing of our souls begins in our Christian life on earth. But when we die, God will finish the cleaning and make our souls perfectly holy in Christ. Therefore, in Heaven, we will be sinless. We will be completely conformed to the image of His Son!

Romans 8:29a. “For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son,”

Therefore, not only will we want to worship God, but we will be perfectly able to because of our new, sinless nature. Our perfect souls will be equipped to enjoy a new joyful and intimate relationship with God.

1 Corinthians 6:2.

Do you not know that the saints will judge the world? And if the world be judged by you, are you unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

1 Corinthians 6:3. (See also Matthew 25:41; 2 Peter 2:4; Jude 1:6.)

Do you not know that we shall judge angels? How much more, things that pertain to this life?

(Check Matthew 19:28; 25:31-41; Jude 1:14,15; 1 Thessalonians 3:13).

Historical Context: The Corinthian church had many problems, including disunity, and contentions, sexual immorality, and a lack of discipline. In these verses Paul taught that it is wrong to go to pagan law courts and sue each other.

- These verses do not teach that we will do the actual judging.

Matthew Henry taught that in Heaven the church are not partners in their Lord's commission, but they will have the honour to sit and watch how He deals with and judges the wicked world. The Church will be there to approve His judgement.

We will watch Christ's judgement on all the evil done by Satan and his angels.

- In other words Christians will be qualified to see the justice of the sentence that is pronounced on fallen angels.
- We will be able to comprehend the nature of law, and of justice.
- If we witness these important and eternal relations, then we ought to be able to discern the nature of justice among ourselves, and to settle the small differences occurring between members of a church.

Note, Christians should never engage in lawsuits till all other remedies have been tried. Wise Christians should solve, if possible, their disputes, and not rely on secular law courts to decide them, especially in matters of no great importance.

APPLICATION:

Dr McEwan's Commentary on 1 Corinthians Book 77 says that, "Paul confronts us with the demand that we deal with problems using an eternal life perspective. "

- We are challenged to always think of things in terms of eternity rather than time.
- Instead of concentrating on any temporary losses now, we are to work towards permanent eternal rewards in Heaven.
- This means we are obligated to do things God's way rather than ours.
- That is why Paul taught this "eternal thinking" solution to problems for all churches in 1 Cor 10:31:

Therefore, whether you eat or drink or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God.

This is our true worship. This is the motivation that God looks for in our hearts. This is all that matters to Him. In Heaven we will be glorified more than you can imagine. The least any believer can do on earth is to bring honour and glory to the Lord Jesus during our short time on earth.

- If any mature believer fails to do this, especially in relationships with brothers and sisters in Christ with whom they will spend eternity in Heaven with, then they are the biggest hypocrites.

What a sad and embarrassing day it is when a Bible believing church does not learn from the errors of the Corinthians and is sunk by "in fighting" and bickering and minor differences. How happy Satan is when the name of the Lord Jesus Christ loses credibility in a community! How he smirks when the wolves get into the Lord's flock. One of Satan's favorite tactics is to destroy churches from the inside.

- Are we prepared to apply what the Holy Spirit has revealed and taught us?
- Are we prepared to be practical children of God and apply Bible lessons in our lives in order to protect the gospel and bring Glory to God?
- Are we prepared to wait until eternity to receive our rewards?

Sadly, many believers claim to believe firmly in Heaven, yet they will not wait until they get there to receive their rewards. In so doing they become hypocrites by default.

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: BLESSED IN HEAVENLY PLACES IN CHRIST [see page 4]

CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

1. The filling of the Holy Spirit produces fruit in the life (love, joy, peace, long suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance). (Galatians 5:22-23) Note that "fruit" is singular - all the characters are produced at the same time in the filling of the Holy Spirit.

2. The Fruit of the Spirit is also listed as follows:-

Romans 14:17 - Righteousness, Peace, Joy

Colossians 3:12-15 - Compassion, Kindness, Humility, Gentleness, Patience, Forgiveness, Love, Peace, Thankfulness

1Thessalonians 1:3 - Faith, Love, Endurance, Hope

2. In principle, it is the imitation of God (Ephesians 5:1). The reason we are left on the earth after salvation is to produce fruit. (John 15:16, Philippians 4:17)

3. We produce fruit by hearing the word (Mark 4:20-28) and applying it to our lives. (Hebrews 4:2)

4. Failure to grow and produce fruit means divine discipline even to the point of the believer's early departure from this life. (Luke 13:6-9 John 15:2)

5. Rewards in eternity are distributed on the basis of faithful production. (1 Corinthians 3:10-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10)

6. Fruit is not to be confused with spiritual gifts. These are listed in (Romans 12:6-8; 15:18-19; 1Corinthians 12:8,10; 1Corinthians 12:28-30; Ephesians 4:1) and other places.

7. One can know Christians by their fruit (Matthew 7:16-20; Luke 6:43-45; 1John 3:10 & 11; John 15:8) especially by their love (John 13:35) but not by their gifts, as Satan can imitate them (2Thessalonians 2:9).

8. Three natural fruits represent some of the facets of the fruit of the Spirit: Apples - love, Grapes - Joy, Pomegranates - Peace.

9. In Galatians 5: 22-23 the fruit of the Spirit is divided into three sections

[a] Love, Joy and Peace towards God;

[b] Patience, Goodness and Kindness towards others;

[c] Faithfulness, Gentleness and Self-control towards oneself.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: REWARDS AND CROWNS

1. Rewards and Salvation are carefully separated in the scriptures. Salvation is a free gift from God, rewards are for meritorious service in the power of the Spirit.

2. Salvation - a free gift to the lost. (Ephesians 2:8-9, Romans 6:23, John 4:10) - an everlasting possession. (John 3:36, John 5:24, John 6:47)

3. Rewards - to the saved who faithfully work for the Lord. (1 Corinthians 9:24, 25, Revelation 22:12) - distributed at the Judgment Seat of Christ. (1 Corinthians 3:11-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10, Romans 14:10)

4. Rewards as Crowns:-

a) The incorruptible crown - for faithfulness in exercising self control. (1 Corinthians 9:24-27)

b) The crown of glory - for faithfulness in suffering. (1 Peter 5:4)

c) The crown of life - for faithfulness under trial. (James 1:12, Revelation 2:10)

d) The crown of righteousness - for faithful testimony. (2 Timothy 4:8)

e) The crown of rejoicing - for faithful service. (1 Thessalonians 2:19, 20, Philippians 4:1)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: SERVICE

1. Our duty is to surrender our entire lives to God. (Romans 12:1)

2. Willingness is essential. (Judges 5:2, 8:25, Isaiah 1:19, 2 Corinthians 8:3)

3. Service in the big things requires by faithfulness in the small things.

4. Monotony and difficulties are transformed into the opportunities with the correct attitude (Matthew 6:33)

5. Everything we do should be "as unto the Lord" (Colossians 3:17)

6. Service to Christ is acceptable to God and approved of men (Romans 14:18)

7. Our work should be completed. (John 4:34, 17:4, Acts 20:24, 2 Timothy 4:7)

8. The example of Christ. (Matthew 20:28, Luke 22:27, Philippians 2:7)

9. Qualities of our service:-

- a) It is demanded. (Hebrews 12:28)
- b) It should be immediate. (Matthew 21:28)
- c) It is abundant. (1 Corinthians 15:58)
- d) It is according to ability. (Matthew 25:22, Luke 12:48)
- e) It is in co-operation with God. (2 Corinthians 6:1)
- f) Must be exclusive (Luke 16:13)
- g) In the power of the spirit (Romans 1:9)

h) Undertaken in Godly fear (Hebrews 12:28)

i) Motivated by love (Galatians 5:13)

10. It is :-

- a) Following Christ (John 12:26)
- b) For him whom all Christians serve (Colossians 3:24)
- c) Service to God (Acts 27:23).

11. It requires:-

- a) Turning from idols (1 Thessalonians 1:9)
- b) Fasting and prayer (Luke 2:37)
- c) Ministry of the Word (Acts 6:1-4).

12. Benefits of Service:-

- a) It glorifies God. (Matthew 5:16, John 15:8)
- b) It enriches life. (1 Timothy 6:18-19)
- c) It gives a pattern for imitation. (Titus 2:7)
- d) It encourages others in their tasks. (Hebrews 10:24)
- e) It shows neighbourliness. (Luke 10:36-37)
- f) It lightens life's burdens. (Galatians 6:2,16)
- g) It demonstrates love. (John 21:15-17)
- h) It demonstrates faith. (James 2:17-18, 1 Peter 2:12)
- i) It is Christlike. (John 13:12-15)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: SERVICE – MODEL SERVANT

1. The unnamed servant in (Genesis 24) is the picture of the model servant as well as a type of the work of the Holy Spirit.

2. The model servant does not pre-empt his master (v2-9). We should wait upon the Lord and not run ahead of time.

3. The model servant goes where he is sent (v4,10). We should be in the geographical will of God.

4. The model servant does nothing else. God has specific tasks for every believer to perform. We should concentrate on our own area and not get sidetracked.

5. The model servant is prayerful and thankful. We should always realise where our power comes from and not get proud when we have spiritual blessings and prosperity.

6. The model servant is keen to succeed (v 17-18, 21). We should be keen to evangelise (Romans 1:14-16).

7. The model servant speaks not of himself but of his master. Who and what we are is not important, who and what Christ is of the greatest importance (v 22, 34-36).

8. The model servant presents the true issue and requires a clear decision. [v49] We should present the gospel and other doctrine clearly and expect results.

CHURCH: WORSHIP AND PRAISE

1. The Hebrew word used in worship is "Shoko" - to bow down.

2. The Greek words are as follows:-

- a) proskueo - prostrate yourself. (1 Corinthians 14:5)
- b) sebomai - lack of arrogance. (Matthew 15:9)
- c) sebazomai - stand in awe. (Romans 1:25)
- d) eusebeo - act with devotion. (Acts 17:23)

3. Worship is the attitude of the believer when he approaches God in awe, fear and respect. (1 Chronicles 29:20, Matthew 22:21, Romans 13:17)

4. We should never be casual or flippant with God. (John 13:13, Hebrew 10:19-21)

5. Worship is an expression of bible doctrine that a believer has in him and is applying. All expression of doctrine is worship. (Nehemiah 8:6-10, 9:3)

6. We must worship the Lord in spirit, controlled by the Spirit, and in truth, reflecting doctrine accurately. (John 4:23-24)

7. It is therefore of critical importance that we worship in accordance with biblical doctrines. This is especially important in singing as because of pleasant music it is easy to forget or ignore the meaning of the words being sung.

8. People worshipped the Lord Jesus Christ. (Matthew 2:11, 9:38)

9. People who do not worship God will worship demons. (Deuteronomy 8:19-20, 11:16, 30:17-20, Romans 1:25)

10. All will eventually bow before Jesus Christ and acknowledge Him as Lord, either for blessing or before they are judged eternally. (Isaiah 45:23, Romans 14:11, Philippians 2:10)

11. In eternity there will be perfect worship as there will be perfect knowledge of doctrine. (Revelation 4:8-11)

12. Worship begins at salvation. (Mark 5:1-10, 18-20)

13. Worship expresses a believers concentration on his Lord. (Psalms 29, 66, 96, John 12:1-11)

14. The song of worship. (1 Chronicles 16:7-36)

15. We worship through:-

- a) Reading God's Word. (Colossians 4:16, 1 Thessalonians 5:27, 1 Timothy 4:13)
- b) Studying God's Word. (2 Timothy 2:15, 3:15)
- c) Teaching God's Word. (Acts 2:42, 6:7, 12:24, 18:28, 1 Timothy 4:6, 2 Timothy 1:13, 2:2)
- d) Preaching God's Word. (2 Timothy 4:2)
- e) The sacrifice of our praise. (Hebrews 13:15)
- f) The sacrifice of our good works. (Hebrews 13:16)
- g) The sacrifice of our bodies. (Romans 12:1)
- h) The sacrifice of our substance. (Philippians 4:18)
- i) The receiving of His Son. (John 1:11-12)
- j) The keeping of the Ordinances. (1 Corinthians 11:2)
- k) Through the singing of Psalms, Hymns and Spiritual Songs. (Ephesians 5:19, Colossians 3:16, James 5:13)
- l) Prayers, Intercessions, Supplications and Thanksgiving. (Acts 2:42, Ephesians 6:18, Philippians 4:6, Colossians 4:2, 1 Thessalonians 5:17, 1 Timothy 2:1-2, 8)

16. Praise

- a) Praise and thanksgiving are linked in worship. (1 Chronicles 23:30)
- b) When they praised the Lord at the dedication of Solomon's Temple the glory of the Lord filled the house of God. (2 Chronicles 5:13,14)
- c) Praise always glorifies God. (Psalm 50:23)
- d) When Paul and Silas praised God by singing hymns in prison God acted for them. (Acts 16:25)
- e) The Jews were delivered when they sang praises to the Lord. (2 Chronicles 20:21,22)
- f) Praise is important in missionary work. (Psalm 96)
- g) Praise is a feature of the Godly home. (Psalm 118:15)
- h) Jesus Christ praises God in the midst of the Church (Hebrews 2:12)

3.5 WHAT WILL OUR BODIES BE LIKE?

This question was raised in 1 Corinthians 15:35:

“but someone will say “How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come?”

In verses 36 to 54 the Apostle Paul provides much deeper answers. The short answer to this is absolutely! We can also look to the resurrection body of the Lord Jesus Christ for clues.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: RESURRECTION BODY

The resurrection body of Jesus Christ -

1. Retained the nail prints in the hands and feet. (Psalm 22:16, Zechariah 12:10, John 20:25-29)
2. Retained the wound scar in the side. (John 20:25-29)
3. Christ was recognised on 15 appearances by his disciples as the one who died and rose again.
4. Resurrection body of Christ could eat. (Luke 24:42-43)
5. It had substance; it could be touched and felt. (Matthew 28:9, Luke 24:39, John 20:17)
6. His body could breathe. (John 20:22)
7. His body possessed flesh and bones. (Luke 24:39-40)
8. Could walk through closed doors. (Luke 24:36, John 20:19)
9. Appears and disappears suddenly. (Luke 24:31,36)
- 10 Could move vertically or horizontally. (Acts 1:9,10)
- 11 Our body will be just like His without the nail prints or wound in the side. (maybe).

These verses may give us some clues as to our resurrection bodies.

How do we know?

1Jo 3:2 says:

Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

KEY WORDS

Beloved, now are we the sons of God:

This is God's guarantee of our future eternal security and glory.

and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him.

The Lord Jesus will have His own definite appearance and may still have the scars of His crucifixion. We also will have a distinctive appearance, yet still be recognizable. Like Jesus we will be without sin, disease, sickness or death.

for we shall see him as he is.

This phrase means that the process begun here on earth about learning to live a Christian life, will be completed the instant we look and see Him as He is. To see Him is to be like Him.

Phi 3:21 gives us more information:

Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

This passage does not teach that the resurrection body will have the same attributes as the Lord Jesus. For example we will not be all knowing or be omnipresent.

It does teach that we will be morally like Jesus.

- The original words, which are rendered here as “vile body,” properly mean “the body of humiliation”. It refers to the body as it is in its present state, as subject to disease, and death.
- Our vile body is very different from what it was when Adam was created, and from what it will be in Heaven.
- Paul says that it is one of the hopes and expectations of the Christian, that this body, so subject to decay, tiredness and sickness, will be changed.

Changed to what? **That it may be conformed to His glorious body :**

Paul lists four differences between our earthly bodies and our future glorified bodies:

- **Raised in Incorruption.** 1 Cor 15:42. On earth our bodies decay and eventually die. In Heaven we will be completely rejuvenated beyond the reach of disease, injury, pain, decay and death. All these earthly facts become fiction. They will end.
- **Raised in Glory.** (V43). Our body returns to the dust of the earth rotting and decaying in the process. It is buried in dishonor (lack of real lasting worth). However, this same body will be raised in glory. We do not know how, but in Heaven it will shine in awesome splendor, like “the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears to hear, let him hear” said Jesus. (Mat 13:43).
- **Raised in Power.** As above, our dead empty bodies will be transformed into bodies that will be forever filled with energy. We will not know what it is to feel tired, or lack strength, or to suffer from fatigue. Can you imagine that? We have absolutely no idea of the sense of well being that will course through our heavenly bodies. Not even the fittest, healthiest athlete in the world today will come anywhere near our health levels in Heaven that will last forever and ever! There will be no walking frames or wheel chairs in Heaven!
- **Raised a Spiritual Body.** (V44). Our earthly body is sown a natural body, but is raised a spiritual body. The word “spiritual” does not mean non-material or non-physical. In the context of this verse it refers to being dominated by the Holy Spirit. IN other words our heavenly body will allow our sinless and perfect souls to worship and serve God in eternity. Isn’t it exciting to think about what our Father is going to make of us and what riches of blessing He has promised to shower us with?

However we must acknowledge the fact that the Scriptures do not categorically state that Jesus’ resurrection body stayed the same once He was taken up into Heaven as stated in Acts 1:9. For example we do not know for sure if His hands are still pierced or if His side is still scarred (John 20:27).

Scripture does tell us **that we shall all be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.** (1 Corinthians 15:51,52).

- We can be sure that whatever Jesus’ glorified body is like now, our new bodies will be similar when we are with Him. Our earthly, human bodies with all the faults will be transformed as stated in Romans 8:11 and Philippians 3:20.

Even now the Lord has these spiritual bodies ready, as it were, for us. There are two phases of our existence, the initial short time here and now in a physical form, and the later eternal life in a spiritual body. What is more important? Where ought our attention to be focused? (1 Corinthians, Dr J McEwan, Book 77, p260).

APPLICATION: The desire and anticipation of the Christian is to be made just like Christ in all things. We desire to resemble him in moral character here, and to be like him in heaven. Nothing else will satisfy us but to conform to the Son of God; and when we shall resemble him in all things, the wishes of our soul will be joyously met and fulfilled.

That is, such a change demands the exertion of vast power. No creature can do it. But there is One who has power entrusted to him over all things, and he can effect this great transformation in the bodies of people. (Compare [1Co_15:26-27](#)).

He can mould the mind and the heart to conformity to his own image, and thus also he can transform the body so that it shall resemble His. Everything He can make subject to His Will. (Mat 28:18, John 17:2)

Our Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, will make these changes either at the point of death or at the rapture.

I can sum it all up by quoting C.S. Lewis from his book “Mere Christianity”; our eternal, heavenly bodies will be “a dazzling, radiant, immortal creature, pulsating all through with such energy and joy and wisdom and love as we cannot now imagine.”

- Our Lord Jesus Christ will be filled with affection and delight and satisfaction when He sees the result of His redemptive work on the cross. He will see all His sheep safely gathered in, every one of the elect in glory. There will not be one empty space. He will be satisfied with the results of the labour of His soul. (Is 53:11a).

Not only this, but He also will be well satisfied with each individual.

Corporately, we will be changed into a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing (Eph 5:27).

Individually, Christ will see Himself in us. That is why we are promised that we shall be like Him in 1 John 3:2. That is why we will be able to say, "Jesus loves me this I know." That is how we will know we are in Heaven.

The Bible is unique in its teaching of a physical resurrection. The doctrine of the resurrection of our physical bodies teaches the reality that our human flesh will one day be raised up and glorified. In other words our bodies will survive death. The proof is in Genesis 1:31.

And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

Then in Genesis 2:7 we see how man became a living being, how he received his living spirit and soul.

And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.

These verses teach that God, the Creator of all matter, did not differentiate between the goodness of the physical and the spiritual.

Man was created with three sections: Body, Soul and Spirit. The body of man was made from the ground 'Adamah' (1 Corinthians 15:47) thus providing a shelter into which the invisible portion, the soul and spirit, was placed.

'And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (lives); and man became a living soul'. The body itself is not alive, so life or lives must be put with the lifeless body by a living entity, God (1 Corinthians 15:45).

In Hebrews 4:12 a distinction is made between the soul and the spirit, physical and spiritual life.

"Soul" - The ability to have fellowship with man and to dominate lower creatures. In man's soul is intelligence, emotion, and free will. Intelligence must have dominance over emotions to act properly.

"Spirit" - The ability to have fellowship with God. At the time of Adam's sin the spirit became dormant and Adam hid from God.

Verse 7b says that **'man became a living soul'**. Man became self-conscious in the soul. What you think is what you are. You may smile outwardly but be bitter inwardly. Joy is freedom from mental attitude sins. After Adam and Eve sinned they could not have relationship with God because they were spiritually dead. Unbelievers can only derive a limited amount of happiness by fellowship with other unbelievers or from materialistic objects.

(Reference: Dr P Moses, Genesis 1-11 Book 31 p30).

This combination of dust of the ground (physical body), soul and spirit is what makes us unique individuals. All three combine to make us who we are.

Therefore when the LORD God sent His Son to die for us, His death was for our body, soul and spirit. Not just for our soul! Our bodies were also bought by His Blood. This is why the Apostle Paul taught that our body is the temple of the Holy Spirit in 1 Corinthians 6:19,20.

V19: **Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own?**

V20: **For you were bought at a price; therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's.**

Notice that Paul says, "you were bought at a price" not just that your soul was bought. You were bought as a total package.

Glorify	doxazo	aorist, active, imperative; at every time/opportunity bring glory to, give cause for celebration.
---------	--------	---

We are commanded to glorify God in our bodies so that when our salvation is made complete in Heaven our bodies and our souls will be glorified together. We will be glorified as a total package as the Word of God teaches in Romans 8:30:

Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.

See how this verse is all in the past tense? Our ultimate glorification is so sure that God has expressed a future truth in the past tense. God is teaching us that our future glory in Heaven is as good as done! It's a done deal! It's all His work, not mans. Amen and hallelujah!

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: - DESTINY OF BELIEVERS

1. He who believes in Jesus Christ has eternal life now (1 John 5:11-13). He will never die (John 11:25,26, John 8:51)
2. Believers are said to "fall asleep" at their death (1 Thessalonians 4:14). The soul departs to be consciously present with Christ, but the body "sleeps" in the grave until the resurrection (2 Corinthians 5:6-8)
3. When Christ comes at the Rapture, the bodies of those in Christ shall be raised from the dead (1 Thessalonians 4:16, 1 Corinthians 15:20-23)
4. Our physical bodies will be replaced by immortal bodies (2 Corinthians 5:1-4) - conformed to the body of Christ (Philippians 3:20-21)
5. We shall be like him (1 John 3:2) seeing His glory and reflecting it in ourselves (Colossians 3:4, John 17:22).
6. We will be rewarded because of works of faith (Luke 19:12-19) which will vary in proportion to our faithfulness in serving God (Matthew 6:20, 1 Corinthians 3:11-15)
7. In the Millennial Kingdom, we shall reign with Christ as priests of God and Christ (Revelation 20:6).
8. To the overcomer (1 John 5:4-5) Christ will give to eat of the tree of life (Revelation 2:7) and shall not be hurt by the second death - the lake of fire (Revelation 2:11). He will be given authority to rule over nations (Revelation 2:26-27) Jesus will acknowledge the believer before God (Revelation 3:4-5) who will be made a pillar in the temple of God. (Revelation 3:12) and will be seated with Christ in His own throne. (Revelation 3:21)
9. God will wipe away all tears from his eyes; sorrow, crying, pain, and death shall be no more (Revelation 21:4)
10. We shall know all things perfectly (1 Corinthians 13:12)
11. We will receive an incorruptible inheritance. (1 Peter 1:3-5) kept by our all powerful God in heaven.

RAPTURE

1. The Rapture of the Church is the termination of the Church Age and is the taking of all believers since Pentecost to Heaven by the Lord Jesus Christ.
2. General Scripture (John 1 4:1-3, 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18)
3. The Rapture and the 2nd Advent should not be confused, they are 7 years apart being separated by the Tribulation and have different characteristics.
4. Rapture
 - a) Not revealed in Old Testament.
 - b) Promises to the Church fulfilled.
 - c) Judgment seat of Christ rewards (1 Corinthians 3:12-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10-11, 2 Timothy 2:11)
 - d) Christ the Bridegroom and Head
 - e) Believers body changed (not creation) (1 Corinthians 15:51-58, Philippians 3:21)
 - f) Church goes to heaven. (1 Thessalonians 4:17)
 - g) Imminent - no signs to be fulfilled before the Church can be removed.
 - h) Time of comfort for believer. (1 Thessalonians 4:18)
 - i) Christ will meet the Church in the air. (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18)
 - j) Private (only believers will see)
 - k) Before tribulation
 - l) Believers go out of the world. (1 Thessalonians 4:16-18)
 - m) Removal of the Holy Spirit. (2 Thessalonians 2:7)
5. Second Advent

- a) Spoken of by all major Old Testament prophets. (Zechariah 14:4)
- b) Promises to Israel fulfilled.
- c) Great White Throne Judgment (after Millennium) - unbelievers. (Matthew 25:31, Revelation 20:12-15).
- d) Christ the Messiah to Israel (Daniel 9:25)
- e) Radical changes in nature. (Romans 8:19-22)
- f) Church comes back to earth (1 Thessalonians 3:13) 4:17)
- g) Many details of prophecy yet to be fulfilled. (Revelation Chapters 6-19)
- h) Time of terror for unbeliever. (Revelation 6:15-17)
- i) Christ will come back to earth (Zechariah 14:4)
- j) Public - every eye shall see him (Revelation 1- 7)
- k) After tribulation.
- l) Unbelievers taken off the earth (Matthew 24:37-42)
- m) Removal of Satan (Revelation 20:1-3)

6. The Rapture is before the Tribulation. Thus the Pre Tribulation Rapture position is shown by nine factors.

- a) The worried Thessalonians (2 Thessalonians 2:1-6)
- b) The Restrainer removed (2 Thessalonians 2:7-12)
- c) The lack of the word 'Church' in (Revelation 13:9)
- d) The verb Tereo in (Revelation 3:10)
- e) Grace before judgment (John 14:3)
- f) Resurrections in their order. (1 Corinthians 15:22-26)
- g) The Covenant approach. The Abrahamic, Davidic and Palestinian covenant fulfilled at 2nd Advent.
- h) The Church is in heaven before the Seal Judgments (Revelation 4,5)
- i) The contrast between the 2nd Advent and the Rapture

CHRIST: IMMORTALITY

1. Immortality means exemption from physical death and should not be confused with eternal life.
2. Immortality is used only with reference to the body (Romans 6:12; 8:11).
3. At this time only Jesus Christ has immortality as He alone has a resurrection body (1 Timothy 1:17; 6:16).
4. All men are currently mortal (Job 4:17; 1 Corinthians 15:22).
5. At the Rapture, our mortal body will put on immortality (1 Corinthians 15:51-54).
6. Death is then conquered and mortality is "swallowed up of life" (2 Corinthians 5:4).

POST MORTEM ON THE DEATH OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

1. An examination of the piercing of the side of our Lord and its implications was made by a great physiologist Samuel Houghton with the following results as to the cause of the physical death of Jesus Christ.
2. When the soldier pierced with his spear the side of Christ he was already dead; and the flow of blood and water that followed was either a natural phenomenon explicable by natural causes, or it was a miracle.

That John thought it, if not to be miraculous, at least to be unusual, appears plainly from the comment he makes upon it, and from the emphatic manner in which he solemnly declares his accuracy in narrating it in John 19:33-35.

John 19:33-35: “ **But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: 34 But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. 35 And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.**

3. Repeated observations and experiments made upon men and animals have shown the following results:
When the left side is freely pierced after death by a large knife, comparable in size with a Roman spear, three distinct cases are observed:

- 1st - No flow of any kind follows the wound except a slight trickling of blood.
- 2nd - A flow of water only, succeeded by a few drops of blood, follows the wound.
- 3rd - A copious flow of blood only follows the wound.

Of the three cases, the first is that which usually occurs; the second in cases of death by drowning and can be proved to be the normal case of a crucified person; whilst the third case would be found in death by pleurisy and rupture of the heart

4. Whilst the above three types are well known, two other cases, although not recorded in the text books, could occur.

4th type - A copious flow of water followed by a copious flow of blood follows the wound.

5th type - A copious flow of blood followed by a copious flow of water follows the wound.

The fifth type is what is recorded in John 19.

5. Death by crucifixion causes a condition of blood in the lungs similar to that produced by drowning. The fourth case would have occurred if the victim had been suffering from pleurisy, whilst the fifth type would occur if the person on the cross had died from a rupture of the heart.

The history of the days preceding our Lord's death as described in the Gospels precludes the idea of pleurisy, as does the type of flow observed by John.

6. CONCLUSIONS

It is therefore concluded that the type of flow recorded in John 19:34 must have resulted from the combination of crucifixion and rupture of the heart.

The fact that it is a mixture of blood clots and a watery serum is evidence of massive clotting of the blood in the main arteries and is exceptionally strong medical proof of death.

Laying aside the inspection by the Roman soldiers who were expert in this area because of their attendance at many crucifixions what John reported as an eyewitness of the blood and water is proof positive that Jesus was physically already dead.

RESURRECTION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

Having demonstrated that He was dead what evidence have we of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ.

1. One very strong evidence is the reports of the change in the disciples after the resurrection and their future attitudes to preaching the gospel despite continual antagonism.

2. Another is the recorded appearances of Christ to believers after His death as shown in the New Testament

[a] Mary Magdalene (John 20:14-18)

[b] Women returning from the tomb (Matthew 28:8-10)

[c] Emmaus couple (Luke 24:13-31)

[d] Peter (Luke 24:34)

[e] Ten disciples (Luke 24:36-43)

[f] Disciples including Thomas (John 20:24-29)

[g] Lake Tiberias appearance (John 21:1-23)

[h] To the 500 (1 Corinthians 15:6)

[i] James (1 Corinthians 15:7)

[j] Disciples at the ascension (Acts 1:3-12)

[k] Stephen (Acts 7:55)

[l] Paul on Damascus Road (Acts 9:3-6)

[m] Paul in the Temple (Acts 22:17-21)

[n] Paul at night (Acts 23:11)

[o] John on Patmos (Revelation 1:10-19)

3 In the case of the appearance, where 500 at one time saw the resurrected Lord Jesus Christ, Paul in 1 Corinthians 15:6 challenges the people to go and ask the eyewitnesses the majority of whom are still alive in 59 AD nearly thirty years after the event.

4. Extra Biblical evidences are provided by eminent Romans of the day

Flavius Josephus who was a Pharisee born in AD 37 living in Jerusalem who sided with and fought with the Romans says in his history Antiquities of the Jews book 18 chapter 3 section 3 which says “ Now there was about this time Jesus, a wise man , if it be lawful to call him a man for he was a doer of wonderful works, a teacher of such men that receive the truth with pleasure. He drew over to him both many of the Jews and many of the Gentiles. He was Christ and when Pilate at the suggestion of the principal men among us [Pharisees] had condemned him to the cross those that loved him at the first did not forsake him for he appeared to them alive again the third day as the divine prophets had foretold these and ten thousand wonderful things concerning him and the tribe of Christians, so named from him are not extinct to this day.”

Cornelius Tacitus a Roman historian and Governor of Asia [Turkey] in AD 112 in his Annals 15:44 refers to the persecution of the Christians under Nero’s regime saying “Christus [Christ] the founder of the name was put to death by Pontius Pilate Procurator of Judea in the reign of Tiberius but the pernicious superstition, repressed for a time broke out again not only through Judea where the mischief started but throughout the city of Rome also.”

Suetonius a Roman historian was the official historian in Rome in 125 AD and in his Life of Claudius 25.4 identifies the sect of Christians as being derived from the instigation of Chrestus which was his spelling of the name Christ.

Pliny the Younger , the governor of Bithynia in 112 AD in his Epistles X 96 states the Christians would not worship the Emperor Trajan and would not curse their leader Jesus Christ even under extreme torture.

Lucian of Samosata in his book “The Passing Peregrinus” declared that Jesus was worshipped by his followers and “was the man who was crucified in Palestine because he introduced a new cult into the world”

12. From the witnesses both believers and unbelievers as well as the effect it had on people it is concluded that the evidence is overwhelming that the Lord Jesus Christ rose from the dead as prophced in the Scriptures.

G B Hardy in his publication summarises it this way: Here is the complete record

Confucius’ tomb	Occupied
Buddha’s tomb	Occupied
Mohammed’s tomb	Occupied
Jesus’ tomb	EMPTY

CHRIST: HYPOSTATIC UNION – GOD - MAN

1. Hypostasis means standing together under one essence, two things united under one with no loss or transfer to the other and no change to either. In the person of Jesus Christ the two natures, divine and human, were inseparably linked with no loss or transfer of properties or attributes, and no mixture or loss of separate identity the union was personal and eternal. The Lord Jesus Christ is still perfectly human and divine Isaiah 7:14, Isaiah 9:6, John 1:1-14, Romans 1:2-5, Romans 9:5, Philippians 2:5-11, 1 Timothy 3:16, Hebrews 1:4

2. The incarnate person of the Lord Jesus Christ included undiminished deity. Jesus Christ is God, He remained co equal and co eternal with the Father while on earth. Christ is eternal because God is eternal life. His deity was never affected by His death, resurrection and session. As God Jesus Christ could not die. However as a baby in the cradle he was holding the universe together.

3. The Lord Jesus Christ was also true humanity; body, soul and spirit although due to the virgin birth he had no old sin nature 1 Peter 2:22

4. The two natures of Jesus Christ are united with no transfer of attributes. Each set of attributes corresponds to the respective natures. The divine attributes such as eternal life, all knowing, everywhere, refers to His divine nature, the human attributes correspond to His human nature. To remove any attribute from His deity would be to destroy deity.

5. No aspect of the divine nature was lacking, although certain attributes were not exercised in line with the Father’s plan Matthew 4:1-10

6. The union of the two natures in the person of Christ must be considered personal, human to the human, divine to the divine. They are never mixed. The union was therefore personal and hypostatic; one essence with two natures.

7. Deity did not indwell humanity or possess it. The union was more than sympathy and harmony, it was unique combining the two natures eternally. He is the God – man

8. Christ had two natures in one person, therefore he could be supremely powerful yet weak at the same time.

- a) Deity cannot be tempted, humanity can. Matthew 4:1-10
- b) Deity cannot thirst, humanity can John 19:28.

c) Deity is omniscient , humanity learns Luke 2:40,52

9. The necessity of the humanity of the Lord Jesus Christ is seen in the following:-

- a) To be our Saviour he had to be man as God cannot die. Hebrews 2:14,15, Philipians 2:7,8
- b) To be our mediator He had to be equal with both God and man Job 9:2, 32-33, 1 Timothy 2:5-6
- c) To be our High Priest He must be a man. Hebrews 7:4,5 14-28; 10:5, 10-14
- d) To be a king he must be a man, a Jew in the line of David. Psalm 89:20-37, 2 Samuel 7:8-16

10. There are three categories of sayings or actions of the Lord:

- a) From his deity alone John 8:58
- b) From his humanity alone John 19:28
- c) From his hypostatic union - John 11:25,26

11. The uniqueness of the person of the Lord Jesus Christ is a key doctrine to understand for all believers, for it is on this point that the accurate preaching of the gospel rests. 1 Timothy 3:16

12. The gospel in one word is Immanuel - God with us. John's testimony on this point John 1:14. In Christ we see God's love and favour towards man. As God revealed himself in the Old Testament, so He perfectly reveals himself in the person of the unique person of the universe , the God man the Lord Jesus Christ.

3.6 WILL WE STILL HAVE OUR EMOTIONS?

The answer to this is a resounding YES! One of the most overwhelming emotions will be joy. This joy will be far in excess of what we have ever experienced in our fallen state. It is a joy that is beyond our comprehension and words. There will be no sadness to detract from our eternal joy. Revelation 7:17 says:

“For the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne will shepherd them and lead them to living fountains of waters. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes.”

Not some tears, but every tear!

For believers, our suffering and pain on earth will not be for nothing.

Remembering the fact that Heaven was created with the purpose to glorify God, we will have emotions but in a different form. The big difference is that our emotions will not control us as they do now.

We know that the Lord Jesus ate and drank with His disciples after the resurrection as recorded in Luke 24: 41-43 and John 21. Therefore we will be able to enjoy food and drink in Heaven. Revelation 19:6-9 provides more evidence in the Wedding Supper of the Lamb, which is a huge feast.

The love that we feel for our spouses, children, parents and friends will be added to in Heaven. The Bible describes Heaven as being rich in the emotions of joy, peace, love and thanksgiving. God gave us these emotions, even in our fallen state so why would he take them away in Heaven and reduce His Glory?

Genesis 1:26.

Then God said, “Let Us make man in our own image, according to our likeness.....”.

v27: So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created him.

Notice the emphasis on image and creation? There is no doubt that the emotions we have are from God Himself.

However there is no reference to any physical likeness to God, just that we resemble God in certain ways. For example, God is a trinity of Father, Son and Holy Spirit. In the same way, man is a trinity of spirit, soul and body.

These verses teach that our intellect, moral nature, ability to communicate and our emotional nature all come from God.

We can look forward to a far higher degree of joy, knowledge and love in our relationships in Heaven with Christ that will completely overshadow any emotion we have felt during our earthly life.

Another emotion worth mentioning is excitement. What will we find exciting? It is the excitement of learning new things. Think of all the things you wanted to learn here on earth. Have you ever had a desire to learn how to play music, paint, learn another language, travel or study any subject of your choice but did not have the chance or the time? In heaven you can do all of these things! There will be unlimited places to travel to. All our creative God given talents will at last be set free for all of eternity to grow and develop! We will finally be able to find out all we ever wanted to know about science, history and creation. In other words any interest you have here on earth will be added to or amplified in

Heaven. We will be amazed when we see how world events and peoples lives were affected by the Sovereign hand of God.

Heaven will most definitely not be boring!

Personality.

We are born with our own, unique special personalities. However during our earthly life our personalities get affected by all sorts of experiences either from our culture, from parental influences from our physical environment and so on. The old person is a modified version of the baby, but yet is still the same person.

The common denominator of every human being that ever existed is the old sin nature. It is the major controlling influence in every person's life. We are just not aware of it. It is the old sin nature, inherited from Adam, that directs us away from Heaven and steers us toward Hell.

When you accept Jesus Christ as your Lord and Saviour, the Holy Spirit instantly indwells you. Now you have two competing natures. The Holy Spirit wants to modify and improve and prepare your personality and character for Heaven. The old sin nature still wants you to steer away from God and maintain the original course for Hell.

The good news is that the old sin nature is doomed to fail.

Every born from above believer goes through a transformation of personality and character. This means that every thought we have, every thing we do and everything that happens to us changes our character to be more like Jesus Christ as our preparation for Heaven (Romans 8:28-30). We become a new creation, with a new desire not to sin. Even though we do not attain sinless perfection in our earthly life, we desire to "sin less" in our daily lives. The sinful things we used to enjoy, we do not enjoy anymore, resulting in an upward change in our personality. In other words, it's only through knowing Christ and serving Him that we find our real, true personalities.

When we get to Heaven, sin will once and for all be totally removed from our soul. However we will be left with a perfected God given personality. We will not be bland robots in Heaven. One of the ways we will recognize each other in Heaven will be by our personalities.

The Example of Elijah.

During his earthly life, the prophet Elijah battled against evil and idolatry of King Ahab, Queen Jezebel and the prophets of Baal. In Malachi 4:5-6, we are told that Elijah will return, along with Moses, to fight against the Antichrist during the tribulation. Elijah will exhibit the same character then as he did in the Old Testament battles.

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT [see page 27]

HAPPINESS: HAPPINESS AND EXPERIMENTS IN ECCLESIASTES

1. This is the state of well being in the soul when the person is content in whatever situation they find themselves.
2. True happiness is unrelated to the circumstances of life. Philippians 4:11, 12, Hebrews 13:5, 6.
3. The Lord has promised to provide everything we NEED. 2 Corinthians 9:8.
4. Even in pain and persecution the truly mature believer can be happy. 1 Peter 3:14, 4:14, Psalms 146:5, Proverbs 16:20, 28:14.
5. The more we know God the more truly happy we will be in this life Psalms 43:4, 1 Timothy 6:15, 16.
6. Many consider that great wealth, position or education will ensure happiness. King Solomon searched for happiness in all of these things, and concluded that true happiness can only be found in God.
 - a) EXPERIMENT 1 - EDUCATION (Ecclesiastes 1:12-18)
 - i) Solomon introduces himself as the king and states that he undertook many educational courses. By hard study he attains a high standard in all his subjects but finds, with improved vocabulary, he is able to explain more to others how sad he is.
 - ii) Solomon's conclusion on education - "All vanity and vexation of spirit" (v 14). Education does not produce happiness.

b) EXPERIMENT 2 - PLEASURE (Ecclesiastes 2:1 -11)

- i) Having spent time with study, Solomon decides to relax and pursue pleasure. He seeks pleasure in laughter (v 2), wine (v 3), great buildings (vs 4-6), servants (vs 7-9).
 - ii) Solomon's conclusion: "All vanity and vexation of spirit" (v 11). Pleasure does not produce happiness.
- c) EXPERIMENT 3 - A POSTERITY (Ecclesiastes 2:12-26)
- i) Solomon reflects that when his time came he would die just as the foolish man. When that day came, unless he had a number of children, he would be forgotten, together with his works. Solomon becomes depressed. He is sleepless at night and comes to the conclusion that one should eat, drink and be merry to eke out a little happiness.
 - ii) Solomon's conclusion: "all vanity and vexation of spirit" (v 26). Posterity does not produce happiness.
- d) EXPERIMENT 4 - PHILOSOPHY (Ecclesiastes 3:1-22)
- i) Solomon, in his philosophy, starts with facts and degenerates through rationalism to agnosticism.
 - ii) He commences with looking at man in time. God's eternal existence, provision and future judgment of the world is given. (vs 13-15). By (v 19) however, Solomon has degenerated to common origin evolution that man is just another member of the animal kingdom and his future destiny is exactly the same as the animals (v 20).
 - iii) He arrives at agnosticism (v 21) and finally humanism (v 22) where he "perceives [that there is nothing better than a man should rejoice in his own works".
 - iv) Solomon concludes this in (Chapter 4) with "This also is vanity and vexation of spirit." Philosophy does not produce happiness.
- e) EXPERIMENT 5 - MONEY (Ecclesiastes 5:10-16)
- i) Solomon who was one of the richest people who ever lived, soon concludes that money or wealth does not bring happiness. He finds that wealth does not satisfy (v 10), you support more and more people (v 11), you do not sleep well at night (v 12). When you die you cannot take your wealth with you (v 15).
 - ii) Solomon concluded money does not produce happiness.
- f) EXPERIMENT 6 - A GOOD REPUTATION (Ecclesiastes 7:1-15)
- i) With the forming of a good reputation over a long period of time, it is necessary to act in a sober, serious way (vs 2-5) rather than in a light-hearted, flippant way. By (v 15) however, Solomon has found that a good reputation does not ensure success or happiness.
 - ii) Solomon concluded a good reputation does not produce happiness.
- g) EXPERIMENT 7 - MORALITY (Ecclesiastes 8:9-15)
- i) Solomon observes that whilst the wicked will be punished in life many times, the wicked succeed and prosper to the human eye whilst the moral do not. He believes this is not fair (v 14) and as a consequence, returns to his solution of eating, drinking and making merry.
 - ii) Solomon concludes that morality does not produce happiness.

7. THE TRUE SOURCE OF HAPPINESS (Ecclesiastes 12:13-14)

Having examined a whole range of ways which the world believes will make you happy, Solomon concludes: "Fear God and keep His commandments, for this is the whole duty of man. For God shall bring every work into judgment with every secret thing, whether it be good or whether it be evil." In this, Solomon is reflecting the principle of (Joshua 1:8).

PEACE

Three types of peace are referred to in the Bible.

1. Peace on Earth:- The unlimited peace when Jesus Christ establishes his millennial reign on the earth. (Isaiah 9:6, 7, Isaiah 11:1-12, Luke 2:14)
2. Peace with God:- Which comes when a believer is born again as a result of justification by faith (2 Peter 1:1,2, Ephesians 2:14-17, Philippians 4:9) - Reconciliation.
3. Peace of God:- Which is the peace of believers in their soul and spirit who have cast all their cares on the Lord (1 Peter 5:7, Philippians 4:6,7) - The Spirit filled life.

HEART

1. The Bible refers to the heart as the seat of consciousness in the soul. The word heart in the Bible refers in general to the mind as there is no understanding available to the physical pump although it is seen as the centre of life.

The brain in the ancient world was divided into two the mind [nous] and the heart [kardia] with academic understanding coming from the mind and its application from the heart. The heart is therefore related to the will.

A parallel system would be gnosis or knowledge and epignosis working knowledge where the knowledge or understanding is put into effect either for good or bad.

2. There is no emotional reference when the heart is noted. Proverbs 2:2, 10, 15:14, 23:10, 1 Samuel 16:7, Genesis 6:5. Emotional reference is often called bowels in the Bible

3. Doctrines are stored in the heart Deuteronomy 29: 4 Proverbs 2:2, 10:18, Psalms 119:11, 19:14, Job 38:36.

4. Negative attitudes of the Heart'

- a) the heart can become "hardened" to the things of God Proverbs 5:12, 13, 10:6, 11, 13
- b) it is the source of discord - Proverbs 6 :14, 18
- c) it can be subtle and evil - Proverbs 7:10
- d) hatred comes from the heart - 2 Samuel 6:16
- e) disappointment is there - Proverbs 14 :12
- f) mental sins are there - Proverbs 14:10-16, Isaiah 47: 10
- g) we turn away from God first in our heart - Jeremiah 17:5, 9, Zechariah 7:12
- h) hypocrisy is in some hearts - Job 36:13

5. The Lord tests our hearts to see if we are true. Psalm 26:2, Jeremiah 11:20, 17:10, 20:12.

SIN: OLD SIN NATURE

1. We are born with a nature, inherited from Adam, which is against God and prone to sin (Ephesians 2:1, Romans 5:12).

2. The old sin nature is perpetuated in the human race by physical birth (Psalm 51:5, 1 Timothy 2:13, 14).

3. We are therefore considered spiritually dead at the point of physical birth (Romans 5:12).

4. Names for the old sin nature:

- a) Flesh - Galatians 5:16
- b) Old Man - Ephesians 4:22, Colossians 3:9
- c) Carnal - Romans 7:14
- d) Sin - Romans 5:12
- e) Heart - Jeremiah 17:9
- f) Member - Colossians 3:5.

5. The believer continues to have an old sin nature after salvation (1 John 1:8, 1 Corinthians 3:1).

6. The believer under the control of the old sin nature is called carnal (Romans 7:14, 1 Corinthians 3:1-3).

7. The old sin nature frustrates true production of the Christian life (Romans 7:15).

8. The old sin nature has two tendencies (Romans 6:6)

- a) Area of weakness - pushes us towards lawlessness and sins (Hebrews 12:1)
- b) Area of strength - pushes us towards asceticism and self-righteousness (Isaiah 64:6).

9. The old sin nature is not found in the resurrection body (1 Corinthians 15:56, Philippians 3:21, 1 Thessalonians 5:23).

10. Victory over the old sin nature is by achieved by considering your old life dead, surrendering to God, confessing sin and relying upon the filling of the Spirit (Romans 6:6,11, Colossians 3:9-10).

SIN: OLD SIN NATURE – THE FRUIT OF

1. The fruit of the old sin nature falls under four categories:

- a) Sensual
- b) Religious
- c) Social
- d) Personal

2. SENSUAL

a) fornication – porneia – illicit sexual activity or any sexual activity other than with your partner.

b) uncleanness - akatharsia - all acts of indecency and uncleanness that shock people, this includes abnormal sexual acts

c) lasciviousness - aselgeia - unrestrained lust - people who are having sex for their own personal gratification, treating other people as sexual objects for their pleasure. Paul recognises that we are tempted in all these areas. Matthew points out that it is not only the doing of these acts but the thinking of these acts which are sins.

3. RELIGIOUS

a) idolatry - eidoltria - worship of things other than God

- b) witchcraft - pharmakeia - this involved magic, astrology, séances and sorcery.
- c) hatred - echthros - this is unrestrained rage without a reason. You get so angry that no one can talk to you at all.
- iv) strife - eris - contentiousness - this is argumentation in regard to Bible teaching and spiritual matters.

4 SOCIAL

- a) jealousy - zelos - a bitter hatred towards another person who has something that you want. This is the father of all the other sins.
- b) wrath - theros - this is getting hot headed or flaring up. If the person does not control the power of a hot temper they are under the power of the old sin nature and not the Holy Spirit. If you get this type of trouble at a church meeting you turn to the Word of God.
- c) seditions - - this is faction forming
- d) heresies - this is one step forward from seditions and is a person who wishes to build on the factions. An example would be the KJV group. By separating on the basis of the KJV alone you have fallen into far more evil than is present in variations in the versions.
- e) evil - this is tied into jealousy eating away at the souls of people who harbour resentment.

5. PERSONAL

- a) drunkenness - methai - drinking alcohol to excess is not a sickness it is a sin. It is an inherited weakness, if your father is an alcoholic you should not touch alcohol at all because it is a weakness in the family. Avoid places where you could be tempted. If you have a weakness towards alcoholism you must deal with it.
- b) revellings - jomoi - which means hell raising, a person who cannot bear silence but has to be drowned in noise all the time. Their life is empty and has no purpose but as long as they party vigorously and run from function to function they do not have to worry about their sin and the pointlessness of their life. When you are tempted to sin think about the Lord. Paul now adds and such like which means that if he has not hit their particular weakness they should fill in the blanks.

6. We all have weaknesses and unless you are on guard you fall every time. You have to ascertain your weakness and set your guard against it. God's way is to walk in the Spirit that is the way to deal with it.

SOUL AND HUMAN SPIRIT

1. The real person is in the soul (Genesis 2:7), the body is merely a house for the soul (2 Corinthians 5:1-4).
2. The soul and the spirit are separate (Hebrews 4:12).
3. In creation, Adam received soul and spirit (Genesis 2:7).
4. It is the soul that is saved, not the body (Romans 5:12, Psalm 19:7, 34:22, Mark 8:36,37, Hebrews 10:39, 1Peter 1:9).
5. The unbeliever has body and soul only (1 Corinthians 2:14).
 - a) The unbeliever does not have an activated spirit (1 Corinthians 2:14, Jude 19).
 - b) The Holy Spirit acts as the regenerator of the human spirit (Genesis 6:3, John 16:8-11, 1 Corinthians 2:14-16).
 - c) At the point of salvation the human spirit is activated.
6. The believer has body, soul and spirit (1 Thessalonians 5:23).
 - a) The believer has an activated spirit (1 Thessalonians 5:23).
 - b) The human spirit deals with spiritual understanding.
 - c) He understands spiritual phenomena (1 Corinthians 2:14).
 - d) The believer grows in grace and knowledge (Ephesians 3:16-19).
7. Characteristics of the Soul
 - a) Deals with human understanding.
 - b) Self awareness (Genesis 35:18, 1 Kings 17:21) - either focus on Christ, or on self (either pride or self-pity).
 - c) Thinking (Luke 12:19) - either divine viewpoint, or human viewpoint.
 - d) Freewill (Acts 3:23) - either obedient to God's will, or self will.
 - e) Emotions (Song of Solomon 1:7, Luke 12:19, 2 Peter 2:8) - either controlled, or pleasing self.
 - f) Conscience (Acts 24:16, Romans 2:15, 9:1,2) - either God's standards, or (either lawlessness or self-righteousness).
 - g) Sin nature (Leviticus 5:1, Psalm 58:2-5, Ezekiel 18:4, Matthew 15:19) - either controlled, or in control.

- h) Departs from body at death (Job 27:8, Psalm 16:10, 2 Corinthians 5:8).
- i) Area of love (1 Samuel 18:1).
- j) Area of misery (Psalm 6:3, 106:15, 119:25,28,81).

ELIJAH – POWER OF GOD

1. SCRIPTURE 1 Kings 17 -19,21; 2 Kings 1,2.

2. BIOGRAPHY

Elijah was a 9th Century BC prophet. His name meant "Jehovah is God". He has very little background mentioned in the Bible even though he is one of the greatest prophets in Jewish history. He was called a Tishbite from Gilead (1 Kings 17:1) and suddenly appeared on the scene. He confronted Ahab with a prediction of drought (1 Kings 17) and retired to the desert. He reappeared where he challenged the prophets of Baal in the Mount Carmel contest (1 Kings 18). Having won a great victory over paganism he fled from Jezebel to Horeb where he resided in despair (1 Kings 19) (see Moses, Topic 30). The second half of his ministry involved the Naboth incident (1 Kings 21) and predicted judgment on Ahaziah for idolatry (2 Kings 1). Like Enoch before him, Elijah was translated without dying, in a fiery chariot (2 Kings 2) leaving his prophet's mantle to Elisha.

3. EVALUATION

- a) Ahab accuses Elijah of causing problems in Israel (1 Kings 18:17).
- b) Elijah tells Ahab that the problems in Israel are caused by Ahab's disobedience to God's laws (1 Kings 18:18).
- c) He challenges Ahab to assemble the prophets of Baal who were being kept at public expense to Mount Carmel (1 Kings 18:19,20). They number 450.
- d) Elijah tells the crowd that he is the last remaining prophet of the Lord and sets up a test of who is the true God (1 Kings 18:21-24).
- e) The prophets of Baal, with incantation and ritual, attempt to invoke their God but to no effect (1 Kings 18:25-29).
- f) Elijah now copies Joshua at Gilgal and makes an altar of 12 stones, places a bullock on wood and pours water on the sacrifice (1 Kings 18:30-36).
- g) The power of God is demonstrated with fire from heaven consuming the sacrifice (1 Kings 18:38).
- h) The drought which had been afflicting the land for 3 1/2 years was now broken (1 Kings 18:41-46).
- i) Jezebel the queen reacted to the death of the priests of Baal who had been slaughtered at Elijah's insistence (1 Kings 18:40) and threatened to kill Elijah.
- j) Elijah becomes depressed and flees into the wilderness. God provides food whilst he is under the juniper tree (1 Kings 19:4-8).
- k) Dwelling in a cave at Mount Horeb, the Lord shows wind, fire and earthquake but the Lord is not in them (1 Kings 19:9-11).
- l) The Lord appears in a still small voice and tells Elijah that he is not the last believer but that there are 7000 other servants of the Lord in Israel. He is to go and find Elisha, his successor as prophet; and anoint Jehu King over Israel (1 Kings 19:12-18).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) Resist the devil and he will flee from you (James 4:7).
- b) Greater is He that is in you than he that is in the world (1 John 4:4).
- c) Nothing is impossible with God (Mark 10:27).
- d) The battle is the Lord's (1 Samuel 17:47).
- e) God will provide great victories against apparently superior forces (cf. Gideon).
- f) It is possible for a spiritual giant to become depressed and disillusioned (John 21:3).
- g) In times of trouble the Lord will give guidance (Psalm 42:1 1).
- h) God will not prosper a nation which has become apostate (Deuteronomy 28:15-68).
- i) The Lord always has faithful representatives to continue His work in the devil's world.
- j) Elijah parallels Moses his fellow herald at the Second Advent in many ways.
- i) Both went to Horeb where God spoke to them.
- ii) Both had a mysterious end to their ministry.
- iii) Both are heralds at the Second Advent (Revelation 11).
- iv) God used fire in both cases as a demonstration of power.
- v) Both seen on the Mount of Transfiguration.
- vi) Both had noteworthy successors.
- k) The servant who fails can again have a major part to play in the plan of God (Jonah).

3.7 WILL THERE BE NATURE IN HEAVEN?

The best way to tackle this question is to remember the purpose of Heaven, which is to show God's Glory.

In Genesis we can read about the creation. God pronounced the creation as very good in Genesis 1:31. There is no doubt that the creation was far more glorious then, compared to its decaying state now. Yet we can still see the awesomeness of God's glory and power in nature. If this is true now, then it must be more so in Heaven.

Other Biblical evidence for nature in Heaven is the Millennium.

Isaiah 65

21 And they shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them. 22 They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant, and another eat: for as the days of a tree are the days of my people, and mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands.

Notice that the trees will live long and bear great fruit, and the people will live and enjoy their trees and their houses under the blessing of the Lord. The only judgment comes when men disobey the Lord, or ignore his instruction to come up to Jerusalem and worship him. In Heaven there is no such condition of judgement, only the eternal joy.

25 The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, saith the LORD.

This verse shows that there is a restoration of the creation, with carnivorous activity ceasing, and all the animals living together without fear of each other. The carnivores eat like the herbivores and the serpents act like worms, and are no threat to man or beast. Just as through salvation man is transformed now, just so the animal kingdom is transformed and all things are made new then. Isaiah 11:6-10, 35:8-10, Titus 3:3-7.

Revelation 19:14.

And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

This verse states the existence of horses in Heaven, so there must be other animals in Heaven too, especially when there are no verses in the whole of the Bible that state otherwise.

Revelation 7:9.

After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

Revelation 22:2.

In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

As can be seen these verses describe palm branches, the Tree of Life (plural not singular, there are many trees), fruit and leaves which indicates that Heaven is full of vegetation.

Also there are no verses in the Bible that state there is no nature in Heaven. It is very probable that there will be more nature in Heaven because there is no such thing as extinction of species caused by the activities of man, like here on earth. In fact, all the good things on Earth could be modeled from Heaven. For example, man was created in the image of God.

DOCTRINES

CONSERVATION

1. God shows His power and glory through creation. (Psalm 8; 29)
2. All living creatures sing God's praise. (Psalm 19:1-3; 69:34; 98:7,8; 148:7,8-10)
3. In His creation God makes Himself known to man. (Psalm 8:3,4; Job , 12:7-9, 38; Romans 1:19-20)
4. Plants and animals are given to man as food. (Genesis 1:29; 9:3; Deuteronomy 14:4-6, 9,11).
5. Wildlife is God's property. (Psalm 50:10,11), He cares for it:
 - a) for the different species (Genesis 7:1-3; 8:1 ; 9:10; Deuteronomy 22:6,7)
 - b) for the individual animals (Job 38:41; Psalm 36:6; 104:10-14,21,27-28; 145:16; 147:8,9; Jonah 4:11; Matthew 6:26; 10:29; Luke 12:6,24)

6. Man has dominion over animals and plants. (Genesis 1:26-28; 9:2; Psalm 8:6-8; Jeremiah 27:5-6; Daniel 2:38)

7. Man is therefore also responsible for the way he treats God's creation!

- a) The land. (Exodus 23:10,11; Leviticus 25:3,4,7; 26:34-35; 2 Chronicles 36:21).
- b) Plant life (Deuteronomy 20:19,20)
- c) Domestic animals (Exodus 20:10; 23:4; Numbers 22:32; Deuteronomy 5:14; 22:4,10; 25:4).
- d) Wildlife (Exodus 23:10,11; Leviticus 25:7; Deuteronomy 22:6,7)

VEGETARIANISM

1. In the Garden of Eden Adam and Eve were vegetarians, Genesis 2:15-16. (There was no death before sin - the penalty of sin is death, therefore death is a result of sin.)

2. This situation continued until the flood, Genesis 3:17-19, 9:1-5.

3. There were special diets for special purposes eg, a Nazarite vow. Numbers 6:1-5. These food restrictions were meant to be "going without" something that was legitimate to sacrifice self for God Numbers 6:1-5.

4. The Mosaic Law also had general restrictions that forbade certain foods as "unclean". They were meant to make Israel different from all the nations around them, so that they stood out as a "set apart" people. Leviticus 11, Deuteronomy 14.

5. These restrictions were removed by the Holy Spirit in his vision given to Peter in Acts 10:1 -28.

6. All meat and vegetables are now given to us as food to be received with thanks. Romans 14:1-3, 1 Corinthians 10:23-26, 1 Timothy 4:3-5.

CREATION

1. The first verse in the Bible is one of the most attacked portions of scripture as many forms of false doctrine are refuted by this verse. There are 8 factors which disprove humanistic philosophy.
Scripture Genesis 1:1 "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."

"In the beginning God" - shows the existence of God - this opposes atheism, the concept that no God exists.

"God created" - shows the eternal creator. The creator we know from other passages is Jesus Christ (Colossians 1:16) – this opposes polytheism, the concept of many gods.

"created the heavens and the earth" – describes the creation of matter which opposes evolution.

"God created" – describes the omnipotence or all-powerful nature of God which opposes pantheism, the worship of many gods.

"God created" - describes the freedom of God and God's will, which opposes fatalism.

This verse requires supernatural revelation which opposes naturalism which states that natural or physical laws are sufficient to explain the universe without divine revelation.

This verse appeals to faith which has no human merit and opposes rationalism and empiricism.

This verse shows the utter helplessness of man which opposes human works or legalism.

2. How long did Creation take?

The original creation of the earth did not occur over a long period of time. Creation occurred at an instant in time (Psalm 33:6, Hebrews 11:3, 2 Peter 3:5).

3. Time of Creation

From the genealogies in the Bible, Adam was created about 4000 BC. The earth may have been originally created prior to Adam.

4. Words for creation in the Hebrew:-

a) Bara means to create something out of nothing.

v.1 God created the universe out of nothing.

v.21 God created the souls of animals out of nothing,

v.27 God created the soul and spirit of man out of nothing.

b) Asah means to create something out of existing material.

v.7 God created the firmament out of existing material.

v.16 The two great lights were made out of material already in existence.

v.26 The body of man was constructed out of the dust of the ground.

c) Yatsar means to mould, as a potter moulds clay.

(Genesis 2:7) The body of man is shaped, head at one end, feet at the other.

d) Examples:

i) All three words for create are used in Isaiah 43:7, a verse on the creation of man. I have Baraed him (soul and spirit), I have Yatsared him (the shape of the body) I have Asahed him (out of earth).

ii) Isaiah 45:18 talks about the creation of the earth using all three words. Thus saith the Lord which Baraed the heavens; God Himself which Yatsared the earth (mountains, valleys, ridges, canyons etc.) and Asahed it out of material already in existence, He has created it not a waste (Tohu).

5. What happened after Creation?

Genesis 1:2 It was created originally perfect because God is perfect. It was changed after it was in existence (Hebrew) Tohu - without form - a waste or a dump. It became (Hebrew) Bohu, void or barren. How did the world become void or barren, a rubbish dump?

Isaiah 14:17 talks of Satan who made the world as a wilderness, a rubbish dump. One concludes that the formation of the world as a waste was a result of Satan's rebellion.

6. Genesis 1:2b - Re-creation or Restoration

In order to have a perfect test for man's free will, man has to be created in innocence, he has to have perfect environment so that only his free will is tested. The author of restoration - The Holy Spirit. "and the Spirit of God moved upon the waters." Man is created and placed on the earth on day 6, therefore there must be 6 days of restoration. Restoration in 6 days must be distinguished from initial creation in Genesis 1:1.

Ministry of the Holy Spirit is to restore life. (Psalm 104:30)

Regeneration - restoration of spiritual life.

Resurrection - restoration of spiritual - physical life.

Restoration - restoration of fellowship.

Convicting ministry - can attempt to restore fellowship.

Psalm 104:30 "Thou (God the Father) sendest forth thy Spirit (Holy Spirit) they are created because thou (Holy Spirit) restoreth the face of the earth.

Principle of Reconstruction (Exodus 20:11): For in six (literal) days the Lord (Holy Spirit) Asah(ed) (made out of existing material) heaven and earth, the sea and all that is in them and rested, the seventh day.

The Holy Spirit restored it out of the waste, the barrenness, the waters.

7. In Summary therefore the Bible indicates that:-

the earth was created, not originally a ruin.

the earth was created to be inhabited (Isaiah 45:18)

the ruin of the earth was the result of Satan's fall and the angelic conflict (Isaiah 14:17)

the earth was then in ruin (Genesis 1:2)

the Holy Spirit moves upon the face of the waters to restore the earth (Genesis 1:2).

8. Were the days of restoration literal 24-hour days?

The word day is used 3 ways in Scripture:

a) For less than 24 hours (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18)

The day of Christ (2 Thessalonians 2:2, 1 Corinthians 15)

The day of Christ is an instant of time and is related to the rapture of the Church.

b) For more than 24 hours

The day of the Lord - 1007 years or part thereof. In the Hebrew if you have the word day with a modifying phrase "of Christ", "of the Lord", it is the only time when the word is used for other than a 24 hour day. Where an ordinal or cardinal number is used it is invariably a solar 24-hour day.

c) For 24 hours (Genesis 1)

Each day is divided into night and day with night coming first and morning after a typical Jewish format. Solar days are always so divided. Vegetation was restored on the 3rd day and it could not have survived in total darkness - the chlorophyll cycle - the light bearers being brought into order on day 4. Clearly the days of restoration are literal 24-hour days.

9. Genesis 1:3-5 - 1st day of Restoration

Day and night are appointed, light is taken out of darkness. v.3 "And God (the Father) said 'Let there be light and there was light. " v.4 "And God (the Holy Spirit) divided the light from the darkness".

Two words are used in two passages relating to LIGHT:

a) OR (Hebrew) essence or substance or fundamental light. The light which is restored on the first day is fundamental light.

b) NEOR (Hebrew) light in a container or light bearer (day 4). The purpose of the light is to solve the problem of darkness. The light does not absorb the darkness but is separated from the darkness. Light is good because it came from God. Light in the scripture has the connotation of good (1 John 1:5). Darkness in the scripture has the connotation of evil (John 3:19). Having formed the light God now names light day and darkness night.

God also distinguishes between Good and Evil and Divine Good and Human Good.
Darkness - unbeliever (2 Corinthians 4:3,4) Light - believer (John 8:12).

It should be noted that if concentrated light of day was not dispersed we would all be dead.

By application - concentration of power is bad for men. Nationalism cannot allow itself to be taken over by Internationalism because no ruler can cope with that amount of power except for Jesus Christ.

10. Genesis 1:6-8 2nd Day of Restoration

Covering the earth is a tremendous amount of water of unknown depth. This great mass of water is going to be divided into two sections by gas (firmament), Nitrogen, Oxygen, Hydrogen, etc. The whole earth is covered by water which is covered by an area of atmosphere with a further canopy of water above it. This will eventually be used in the judgment of the flood.

v.6 God (the Father) said let there be atmosphere (firmament). Firmament is described in four passages.

Psalm 104:2 - a carpet spread out over the earth.

Isaiah 40:22 - a curtain made of gauze - it has weight but is light and you cannot see it.

Exodus 24:10 - a transparent work of sapphire - the blue sky.

Job 37:18 - as a molten looking glass

Genesis 1:6b - and let the atmosphere, divide waters (below) from waters (above)

Genesis 1:7 - and God (Holy Spirit) ASAHED the atmosphere.

Genesis 1:8 - and God called the atmosphere HEAVEN (singular) - this is the 1st heaven, God is in the third heaven. - evening and morning - day 2.

By application just as the atmosphere divides the waters so the cross divides the human race canopy - believers - cross - unbelievers (John 3:36)

11. Genesis 1:9-13 3rd Day of Restoration

The earth is covered with water - much of the water is withdrawn under the earth with the exception of seas and oceans which are a small portion of the water only. The water from Noah's flood came from below and from above. Prior to the flood the ground was watered from below (Genesis 2:5,6). On the 3rd day the land appeared, the vegetation was restored.

Genesis 1:9 "And God (the Father) said ... Let dry land appear" (Psalm 104:5-10). Dryness - earth, waters - seas. "And He saw that it was good" - means the plan of God was working towards perfect environment for man.

Genesis 1:11,12 - Vegetation appears in grass, herbs yielding seed - vegetables, and trees and shrubs.

"whose seed is inside itself" - No transmutation of species. Progression or retrogression but no transmutation. Dogs never produce cats, roses never produce tulips.

12. Genesis 1:14-19 4th Day of Restoration

v.14 And God (the Father) said let there be light (NEORIM) light containers in the firmament (atmosphere - first heaven) - to divide the day from the night. Decentralising light it becomes beneficial to man. The NEORIM are divided into containers - (stars), reflectors - (planets and the moon).

The five fold reason for light containers:-

a) Divide day from night - in the fallen state the darkness of the earth had no light in it at all - at night there is light, whilst a lot of the light containers are brighter than the sun they are many light years away. God the Holy Spirit therefore arranged things so that there would be a difference between day and night. By application, believers are (NEORIM) they bear the gospel light.

b) Signs - a miraculous activity which designates something as coming from God.

Signs had a two fold purpose:-

i) To announce unusual events - e.g. birth of Christ (Matthew 2:2)

ii) To show changes in weather (Matthew 16:1-4)

c) Seasons - the establishment of seasons for agriculture - dependent on weather (Matthew 13:37-39). Agriculture is based upon seasons - a planting season, growing season, harvesting season.

d) Days and Years - calculation of calendars. We not only orient ourselves to day and night and summer and winter, but also to years.

e) Light in the Atmosphere (v.15) - these are absolutely essential for life, health and growth in the human race. The sun is light in the atmosphere, so are the stars.

v.16 - Threefold classification of these light containers: the greater light (sun), the lesser light (moon), and the stars.

v.17,18 - The Restoration of the Light Bearers. God placed them in the firmament to give light upon the earth, God saw that it was good, end day 4.

13. Genesis 1:20-23 5th Day of Restoration

The creation of aquatic and aerial life v.20 (Erroneous translation in King James Version). Correction: "and God (the Father) said let the waters swarm with "swarms" (mammals, reptiles, and fish), let the birds fly above the earth in the atmosphere." (v 21). God created whales - long stretched creatures (Hebrew), which the water brought forth abundantly after its kind.

Principle: Science did not make laws - they discovered them. Scientific laws are the portrayal of God's unchangeability. There is variation and change through all species but no change from one species to another. God blessed them and said - be fruitful and multiply - the birds to multiply on the earth.

14. Genesis 1:24-31: 6th Day of Restoration

a) Creation of animal life (v. 24,25). Let the earth bring forth living creatures after its kind, cattle, creeping things (reptiles) and God saw that it was good.

b) Now we come to Homo Sapiens (v 26,27); "And God said Let us make (bara, asah) man out of the chemicals of the soil, make man in Our image".

c) The Seed of the Woman

v.27 So God (Jesus Christ) created (bara) man in his own image - the real you lives inside of you and is immaterial - soul and spirit - the image of God cannot be seen. "Male and female created He them". God divided male and female. Before God divided male and female they were originally one. When they were divided they had certain characteristics the male being characterised by the SUN - an initiator - JACOB; the female by the MOON - reflector or responder - RACHEL, and complemented one another (Genesis 37:9-10).

d) v.28 Man's domination over the animals.

When man came from the hand of God he was given dominion over the earth. Now when man sinned Satan was given that dominion. When Jesus Christ comes at the Second Advent, He will rule the earth as man - the God man Christ Jesus. Man is told to be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth.

15. Food

God said that the herbs of the earth and fruit of the trees had been provided for man for food. (Man originally was a vegetarian). After the flood man was commanded to eat flesh (Genesis 9:3) (Man became omnivorous). At the Second Advent the lion and the ox will eat straw together and it would appear that Man will become a vegetarian again (Romans 8:19-22; Isaiah 65:25; 11:6-9).

16. Genesis 2 The 7th Day

This chapter begins with rest, the Sabbath, and ends with marriage.

Genesis 2:1-3 The Sabbath "Thus the heavens and the earth were finished and all the host of them and on the seventh day God ended his work which He had made and rested on the seventh day from all the work He had made. And God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it because that in it He had rested from all His work which God created and made. "

3.8 WILL WE HAVE PETS IN HEAVEN? (ASKED BY MOST CHILDREN!)

God allows us to enjoy pets on Earth, so why not also in Heaven? It is true that animals do not have souls.

However we must also remember the character of God, and part of His character is that He is Sovereign and has the right to do as He pleases. As the Creator of all things, God has the power and the right to put animals in Heaven even though they do not have souls like humans do.

As we have already seen in the previous question there is no doubt that there is nature in Heaven, so maybe all the animals will be our pets!

3.9 WILL WE EAT IN HEAVEN?

The Lord Jesus was able to eat and drink in His Resurrection body. So from His example we can assume that believers in their resurrection bodies can do the same. (Luke 24:41-43; John 21:5-14).

The big difference in Heaven is that we will not have to eat and drink as a matter of survival. Instead, we will be eternally sustained by the pure water from the river of life and the fruit from the Tree of Life. (Revelation 22:1,2).

NOTE: Please see the New Jerusalem section in this book for more detail on these two verses.

DOCTRINES

FEEDING THE FIVE THOUSAND – OUTLINE OF HISTORY

1. The feeding of the five thousand and the subsequent walking on the water can be analogised to the span of human history from the ministry of Jesus Christ on earth to the Millennial reign of Christ (Matthew 14:13-33).
2. The healing of the sick and the feeding of the five thousand relates to the ministry of Jesus Christ on earth during his first advent in the Age of the Jews (v 15-21).
3. The baskets of bread with which the disciples set off in the boat - the canon of scripture (v 20),
4. The setting off in the boat - the church age believers without Jesus Christ in a physical form on earth (v 22).
5. The water represents the Gentile nations which make up the church (v 22).
6. Jesus going up into the mountains to pray by himself shows the ascension and session of Christ at the right hand of God during the Church Age where he makes intercession for us.
7. The boat hit by a tremendous storm (v 24) portrays the time of the tribulation just prior to the return of Christ, a time of great testing.
8. The Lord appearing at the height of the storm (v 27) indicates the return of Jesus Christ at the Second Advent.
9. As the Lord enters the boat the storm ceases (v 32), representing the perfect environment of the Millennium with the Lord back on earth.
10. The worship of Jesus Christ shows the worship of Christ in the Millennium (v 33) when the knowledge of the Lord will cover the earth as the waters cover the sea.

LEAVEN

1. Leaven in Principle: Denotes any substance used to induce fermentation as in a dough or liquid.
2. First mention in Scripture: Genesis 19:3 in connection with the angelic visitors to Lot's house prior to the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. Lot served them "unleavened bread".
3. First mention in Scripture relative to the Observation of a Feast: Exodus 12:8, 15-20 - Passover and the Feast of Unleavened Bread.
 - a) Leaven was undesirable and became a symbol of evil.
 - b) Unleavened bread is a type of Christ and refers to His impeccability.
4. Leaven in Matthew 13:33 represents the infiltration of religious apostasy during the Tribulation.
5. The Leaven of the Sadducees is rationalism, the sin of human viewpoint, resulting in gospel rejection. (Matthew 16:6)
6. The Leaven of the Pharisees is the Satanic counterattack against sound doctrine by religion, legalism and ritualism. (Mark 8:15, Luke 12:1)
7. The Leaven of Herod is the sin of worldliness (Romans 12:2) and power lust within a local congregation. (Mark 8:15)
8. The Leaven of the Corinthians is the sin of licentiousness and perversion. (1 Corinthians 5:6, 7, 1 Corinthians 5:1,2)
9. The Leaven of the Galatians is the sin of legalism, specifically their insistence upon circumcision for salvation. (Galatians 5:9)

SALT

1. Salt is a preserver and speaks of eternal life.

2. Salt is a seasoner and speaks of the richness of life designed by God for every believer.
3. Salt is the antithesis of leaven. Leaven corrupts, salt preserves.
4. The believer on earth is the salt of the earth in Matthew 5:13. Salt is an unseen preserver.
5. Since believers living in nations are often the reason for the preservation of the nations, when people turn away from God, nations are destroyed.
6. The salt of the covenant - when a contract was drawn up in the ancient world both parties ate salt to seal the contract. The eating of salt depicts receiving salvation.
7. In the ancient world, if your guest ate salt with you, you guaranteed to protect him from harm while he was with you.

FEASTS OF ISRAEL

1. In the Jewish calendar seven feasts were ordained by God for the Jews to follow and to be a sign to all believers.

2. In order the feasts were:-

- a) Passover
- b) Unleavened Bread
- c) First Fruits
- d) Pentecost
- e) Trumpets
- f) Atonement
- g) Tabernacles

3. THE PASSOVER (Deuteronomy 16:1-8, Leviticus 23:5)

Historically

- a) This feast originated on the night when the angel of the Lord passed over the land of Egypt immediately prior to the children of Israel leaving their bondage under Moses.
- b) A male lamb without blemish was killed on the 14th Nisan having been brought into the house 4 days before, great care being taken that not a bone in its body was broken. (Exodus 12:1-6)
- c) The lamb was roasted, eaten with bitter herbs and any portion left was burnt. (Exodus 12:7-10)
- d) In the original Passover the blood of the Lamb was daubed on the doorposts and lintels, any such house being spared from the last plague against Egypt. (Exodus 12:21-28) All plagues were against the gods of Egypt.
- e) The Passover was on the anniversary of the promise to Abraham. (Exodus 12:41)

Fulfilment

- a) The sacrificial lamb represents the Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 5:7)
- b) Christ died on the 14th Nisan on the cross having entered Jerusalem, the Holy city 4 days before on the 10th Nisan.
- c) When the Roman soldiers broke the legs of the thieves they found Jesus dead so no bone in His body was broken. (John 19:32, 33)
- d) The roasting of the lamb represents judgment, the bitter herbs representing sins or failures.
- e) The eating of the lamb represents faith in the work of Christ i.e. eating and drinking at the communion table.)
- f) By faith in Christ we are protected from the final judgment of God. (Romans 8:1)

Currently

- a) Each time we celebrate the Lord's supper we are looking back to the cross and the work of the Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 11:23-26)
- b) This could also represent salvation to the believer.

4. UNLEAVENED BREAD (Leviticus 23:6-8)

- a) This feast lasted for seven days starting on the 15th Nisan and portrays the provision and fellowship with God.
- b) The bread was unleavened due to the need to leave Egypt with utmost haste. In addition the wine was without leaven or alcohol - the wine being boiled during this feast. This has been found in Chaldean army instructions when it was feared that the Jews could revolt during the time of unleavened bread if they were served with alcoholic Chaldean beer.
- c) As God can have nothing to do with sin God's provision is without leaven as leaven represents evil in the scriptures.
- d) There are various forms of leaven in the Bible:-
 - i) Leaven of the Sadducees - human viewpoint. (Matthew 16:6)
 - ii) Leaven of the Pharisees - ritualism (Mark 8:15)
 - iii) Leaven of Herod - worldliness (Mark 8:15)
 - iv) Leaven of the Corinthians - wantonness (1 Corinthians 5:6, 7)
 - v) Leaven of the Galatians - legalism (Galatians 5:9)
- e) Bread made without leaven shows the perfection of Christ. (Leviticus 2:11)
- f) This could represent the Christian walk for the believer.

g) The unleavened bread was cooked on a griddle which caused the bread to have stripes. It also had holes. By his stripes we are healed (Isaiah 53:5) They will look upon him whom they have pierced.(Zechariah 12:10)

5. FIRST FRUITS (Leviticus 23:9-14)

- a) This feast always occurred on a Sunday and was celebrated on the 17th Nisan.
- b) This feast portrayed the resurrection of Christ and occurred half-way through the feast of Unleavened Bread.
- c) Christ is said to be the first fruits of them that sleep. (1 Corinthians 15:20)
- d) Christ rose 3 days after his death on the Passover.
- e) The Jews crossed the Red Sea 3 days after leaving bondage.
- f) The ark rested on Ararat on this very day after the flood. (Genesis 8:4)
- g) This could represent the resurrection body for the believer.

6. PENTECOST (Leviticus 23:15-21)

- a) Pente - fifty - this occurred always on a Sunday 50 days or a week of weeks after the first fruits, generally in May or June. (Leviticus 23:15)
- b) It represents the dispersion of the Jews which occurred historically in AD 70 and there followed a long gap to the next feast representing the long time the Jews would be out of the land.
- c) Pentecost in the year of the crucifixion was the day on which the Church age started with the baptism of the Holy Spirit in Jerusalem. (Acts 2:1-4).
- d) At Pentecost, 3,000 were born again; at the giving of the law, 3,000 were killed.

7. TRUMPETS (Leviticus 23:23, 24)

- a) This occurred in September, the blowing of the trumpets representing the coming of the king. It is the Jewish New Year Day.
- b) This represents the return of the Lord Jesus Christ for his Church at the Rapture. The Jews recognise this as the day on which God would again have a relationship with the Jews.

8. ATONEMENT (Leviticus 23:26-32)

- a) This occurred ten days after the feast of trumpets. It represents the fact that believing Jews only enter into the Millennium.
- b) From evaluation of (Daniel 12:11 & 12) and parallel passages it is apparent that there is a period of judgment at the second advent of some 45 days. This is a period of the wheat and tares, the sheep and the goats. The unbelievers are baptised with fire. (Matthew 3:11,12.) The believers enter the Millennium.
- c) This was the only day of the year that the high priest was able to enter the Holy of Holies bringing a bowl of blood, once for himself and once for the nation. (Hebrews 9:6-7). His entry represents the sacrifice of Christ.
- d) Christ's sacrifice is the fulfilment of this ritual. Christ only had to make one offering, as he was sinless, for the sins of the world. (Hebrews 9:11-14) On the feast of Atonement red wool, the Atonement Lot, was tied to the temple pillar. After the blood was spilt the lot turned white until the time of the cross. Afterwards it stayed red. This sign showed Christ's once and for all sacrifice.

9. TABERNACLES (Leviticus 23:33-36)

This occurred five days after the feast of Atonement and lasted a week. It represents the Millennial reign of Christ and the perfect provision and environment provided. (Deuteronomy 16:13-15, Romans 8:19-22)

10. It is of interest that the two feasts that speak of God's perfect provision - Unleavened Bread and Tabernacles - were a week duration whilst the others were for a day, speaking of a point in time occurrence such as the crucifixion, resurrection or rapture of the Church.

11. SUMMARY

- a) PASSOVER fulfilled at The Crucifixion on Passover AD 32
- b) UNLEAVENED BREAD fulfilled at Burial of Christ on Unleavened Bread AD 32
- c) FIRST-FRUITS fulfilled at Resurrection of Christ on First-Fruits AD 32
- d) PENTECOST fulfilled at End of Jewish Age on Pentecost AD 32
- e) TRUMPETS to be fulfilled at Rapture of Church
- f) ATONEMENT to be fulfilled at Second Advent of Christ
- g) TABERNACLES to be fulfilled at Millennial reign of Christ

12. As Paul had seen the literal fulfilment of the first four feasts in some 8 weeks in AD 32 it is hardly surprising that he would expect to be in the "rapture generation" (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18, 2 Thessalonians 2:1)

CHURCH: COMMUNION: THE LORD'S SUPPER

1. There are three suppers which man is invited to:-
 - a) The gospel supper (Luke 14:15-24)
 - b) Marriage supper of the Lamb (Revelation. 19:7-9)
 - c) Lord's supper (1 Corinthians. 11:23-29)
2. Those who accept the gospel supper will eventually appear at the wedding supper and in the meantime, whilst on earth, should partake of the Lord's supper.
3. At the Lord's Supper the believer meditates on:-
 - a) The death of Jesus Christ as his personal Saviour.
 - b) The risen Lord who makes intercession for him.
 - c) The coming Lord who will return for His church and set up His reign on the earth.
4. The Lord's Supper is derived from the Passover meal (Exodus. 12:1-11, 1 Corinthians. 11:23-32). Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us (1 Corinthians. 5:7)
5. The bread represents the body of Christ which was broken for us when He bore our sins on the cross (1 Corinthians 11:24)
The wine represents the blood of Christ which is the guarantee of our salvation. For without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sin. (1 Corinthians. 11:25)
6. The Lord's Table is prepared for believers in the presence of their enemies (Psalm 23:5)
7. The believer must be in fellowship to discern the meaning of the Lord's Supper (1 Corinthians 11:29). This is accomplished by self judgment (1 Corinthians 11:31, 1 John 1:9)
8. Partaking of the Lord's Supper without fellowship with the Lord can result in sickness or death. (1 Corinthians 11:30)

DRINKING ALCOHOL

1. Drunkenness is always condemned as a sin in the Bible. (Proverbs 20:1, 23:20, Isaiah 5:11-22, 28:7, 8, Romans 13:13, 1 Corinthians 5:11, Ephesians 5:18)
2. Drinking of alcoholic beverages is to be avoided in certain positions of leadership.
 - (a) Kings (rulers, government leaders) (Proverbs 31:4, 5)
 - (b) Pastors (1 Timothy 3:3, Titus 1:7)
 - (c) Deacons (1 Timothy 3:8)
3. Drinking of alcoholic beverages proved disastrous for certain persons
 - (a) Noah (Genesis 9:21)
 - (b) Nabal (1 Samuel 25:36,37)
 - (c) Ephraim (Isaiah 28:1)
 - (d) Lot (Genesis 19:32-6)
4. Drinking of alcoholic beverages is condoned in certain areas. For example:- for medicinal reasons, or where customary with meals, moderate amounts of alcoholic beverages are permissible (Proverbs 31:6-7, 1 Timothy 5:23)
Normal cough mixture for instance contains a significant amount of alcohol.
5. It is possible that the water which Jesus Christ turned into wine was an alcoholic beverage (John 2:1 -11). This passage neither condemns nor condones drinking of alcoholic beverages but was the use of a miracle to focus attention on the person of Jesus Christ as the God-Man-Saviour. Wine produces joy in the heart. (Judges 9:13, Psalm 104:15)
6. Alcoholism forms a part of the pattern of national disaster (Joel 1:4-6, Isaiah 28). It leads to economic depression and encourages military invasion. Jeremiah 13:12-17
7. Adverse effects of excessive drinking of alcoholic beverages:-
 - (a) Leads to impulsive, abusive and irresponsible behaviour, vehicle accidents.
 - (b) Causes paralysis of the eyes (Wernicke's disease), tunnel vision.
 - (c) Destroys brain tissue.
 - (d) Produces cirrhosis of the liver,
 - (e) Results in delirium tremens (D.T.'s) which cause confusion, anxiety, terror and delusions. Alcoholism is drug addiction which involves destruction of the soul. (Galatians 5:20-21)
8. Importance of abstinence from alcoholic beverages in youth cannot be over emphasised.
9. Conditions under which indulgence in alcoholic beverage should be avoided from a believer's viewpoint.
 - (a) Application of the law of love - towards believers.

- (b) Law of expediency - towards unbelievers: used when drinking becomes a false issue in presenting the gospel.
- (c) Law of supreme sacrifice - towards God: applicable when drinking hinders a specific ministry.

Application - In Australia probably alcohol should be avoided because of major problems, vehicle accidents, social problems. In Greece however, a glass of wine with a meal would be expected and rejection by a Christian could cause a false issue.

10. Drinking is related to degeneracy. Wine and drunkenness are used in the Scripture to represent the entire principle of sublimation involved in rejecting God's way. (Jeremiah 13:12-17)

3.10 WHAT AGE WILL I BE?

The answer to this question is educated guesswork because there are no specific verses that state categorically that we will be of a particular age.

The general accepted belief is that we will be equivalent to 33 earthly years of age. This is taken as the ideal age of maturity, because this was the age of the Lord Jesus Christ during His ministry.

The Bible also describes appearances of Old Testament saints who are recognizable to living people.

For example, King Saul and the prophet Samuel (1 Samuel 28:11, 12) and the Transfiguration of Jesus (Matthew 17:1-13; Mark 9:2-13; Luke 9:28-36).

Matthew 17:1-4.

1 And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

From this account, which is backed up by the other Gospels, it is plain that Peter, James and John recognized the two men who talked with the Lord Jesus as Moses and Elijah. They recognized Moses and Elijah even though they never met them personally and did not have the luxury of photographs! The Lord God revealed the identity of the Old Testament saints to the disciples.

In the same way parents may be able to recognize their dead babies and children in Heaven, even though they are in mature resurrection bodies. What a loving God we have!

The reverse is also true. The Bible does not record supernatural appearances of babies or children from Heaven. Even when angels appear to men, they are always in a state of adulthood.

Therefore it is a safe assumption that we will all be at a "perfectly mature" age.

With the Almighty God nothing is impossible! (Luke 1:37).

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY

Categories of Believers

1. Standpoint of Spirituality:

- a) Spiritual believer - the Holy Spirit controls the inside of the believer (Romans 8:6b).
- b) Carnal believer - the sinful nature controls the inside of the believer (Romans 8:6a).

2. Standpoint of Growth:

- a) Baby - one who has just received Christ as Saviour.
- b) Adolescent - one who has learned some doctrine but is not yet in the application state.

c) Mature - one who knows and applies doctrine and spends a maximum amount of time in the filling of the Holy Spirit.

3. Relationship of Maturity and Spirituality:

a) Spirituality is an absolute. The Holy Spirit either controls or He does not. One cannot be a little bit carnal. If he is carnal he is NOT spiritual.

b) Maturity is speeded up by spirituality, but a baby believer can be either carnal or spiritual, and a mature believer can be carnal or spiritual.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY: CROSS TO THE CROWN

1. Salvation is only the beginning of the plan for man. After salvation the believer's objective is to advance in stages of spiritual growth on the path from the Cross to the Crown.

2. At each stage the believer faces increasing intense tests that can only be passed by faith. Paul in Romans 1:17 says believers progress from faith to faith. The five Hebrew words for faith illustrate the five stages of growth described in the New Testament.

a) The Babe - 1 Peter 2:2 - AMEN - the leaning faith of Genesis 15:6

All believers enter the family of God as infants when they exercise faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. After the tremendous stress of birth, of coming from darkness into the light the infant's impulse is to nurse. The objective is nourishment but the baby also receives great comfort in feeding. God's objective for the spiritual infant is for growth, but He commences this with comfort. Not much is expected of a baby in his first few years, he cannot feed or change himself. Spiritual infants are just as helpless and need a great deal of nurturing, encouragement and patient encouragement and patient instruction.

b) The Adolescent - 1 John 2:13-14 - BATAH - the wrestling faith of Psalm 37:3

Adolescents young, strong and eager believers. This is the stage where people have grown to the point at which they understand some of the principles of truth and are beginning to apply them to their lives. But like most adolescents, they have the growing pains of arrogance and rebellion against authority; they are sometimes too eager to act on their own, and this often gets them into trouble. They have knowledge which they mistake for wisdom, but they lack the experience. Their tendency is to want to apply the truth to other people's lives. Adolescents may be troublesome, but at least they are not apathetic. They must be patiently trained and encouraged to channel their energies. No one makes it to maturity without passing through adolescence.

c) The Mature - Hebrews 5:14, 6:1 - CHASAH - the confident faith that takes refuge in the Lord - Psalm 57:1

The mature believer is able to take meat, the advance doctrine of the Word. A believer who has arrived at spiritual maturity knows enough about the Bible to take responsibility for his own life. He knows how to apply the Word of God to himself so rather than airing all his problems he knows how to solve them. He is not ready to take on every one else's problems but he can take control of his own life. He understands that God has a plan for his life and sets about fulfilling that plan. He gives himself to training and discipline, exercising himself and building spiritual muscle.

d) The Hero of Faith - Isaiah 53:12, Hebrews 11 - YACHAL - the healing faith of Job 13:15

Heroes of faith are men and women who have gone beyond maturity and have learned to fight the good fight. They have advanced beyond simply taking responsibility for their own lives to becoming responsible for the lives of other people. They are always willing to pick up fallen comrades, to treat their wounds, to encourage them and supply their needs. Heroes of the faith still make mistakes, they still fail but they always stand back up and go back into battle.

e) The Friend of God - James 2:23-25 - QAWAH - the enduring faith of Isaiah 40:31

The highest of all possible achievements in life is to become a friend of God. Every believer has the potential and the assets necessary to reach this point, but very few Christians do. It takes persistency and tenacity. The only people who make it this far are those who absolutely refuse to quit.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY - SIGNS OF MATURITY (ROMANS 15:1-15)

1. Helping others (v 1-3) The mature believer should bear the infirmities of the weak (v 1; cf. Galatians 6:2). Paul includes himself as a believer of mature strength.

a) A mature believer is characterised by:

- i) Knowing doctrine.
- ii) Knowing promises.
- iii) Spending a maximum amount of time by the filling of the Holy Spirit.

- b) A weak or immature believer may be:
 - i) A new believer.
 - ii) An ignorant believer who does not know the Word.
- c) A mature believer bears the infirmities of the weak believer by:
 - i) Giving information about the Word (doctrine, promises, procedures). This may be in private conversation.
 - ii) Giving advice based on the Word.
 - iii) Exercising grace; listening to and helping others with problems.
- d) The mature believer is not to "please himself" (v 1,2):
 - i) He is not to feed his ego or brag about helping others. It should never be done for self-glory or self-stimulation, but for God's glory.
 - ii) Christ as the supreme example (v 3):

He did not please Himself; but as a man He received more pressure than we will ever have. The Old Testament says, "the reproaches of Israel ('them') that reproached the Father ('Thee') fell on the Son ('Me') on the cross." Paul quotes a Messianic Psalm (Psalm 69:9). Christ was under maximum pressure when He bore our sins on the cross.

2. Knowledge of the Word of God (v 4)

- a) The Old Testament ("things written aforetime") was the only scripture existing at the time Romans was written. The canon is now completed.
- b) the purpose of the Word:
 - i) Learning - doctrine God wants us to know.
 - ii) Patience - faith in the long distance race. Believing moment by moment.
 - iii) Comfort - in trials and difficulties of life.
 - iv) Hope - for the future. Believers know where they are going.

3. Attitudes (v 5-6)

Believers are to see others from the divine viewpoint and be "like-minded one toward another". Their one purpose in life, after salvation, is "with one mind and one mouth, glorify God" (v 6). This is only possible from the divine viewpoint.

- i) We are all saved by grace. Christ died for us when we were His enemies (Romans 5:8).
- ii) We all have the same spiritual privileges and responsibilities (except spiritual gifts).
- iii) Every believer has a sinful nature but have different ways of expressing it.
- iv) We all get spirituality the same way (filling of the Holy Spirit) and all grow the same way, by the Word.

v) God loves each believer with the same amount of love, whether we are in or out of temporal fellowship.

4. Fellowship as the basis of grace (v 7)

- a) Believers are to receive one another as Christ received them.
- b) He received them in GRACE to the glory of God.

5. Ability to distinguish between Israel and the Church (v 8-12)

- a) Christ was a minister under the Law (v 8).
 - i) He was born, ministered, died, arose and ascended under the dispensation of the Law.
 - ii) Therefore all He said (except Matthew 16 and John 14-17) amplified the Mosaic Law, confirmed the four unconditional covenants to Israel and the future of Israel with Him as their King. Some principles He gave are re-stated in the Epistles as the Christian way of life.

b) Before the Law was given (v 9) the Abrahamic and Palestinian covenants promised blessing to the Jews, that the Gentiles may glorify God for His mercy.

c) Paul quotes (Psalm 18:49; Deuteronomy 32:43; Psalm 117; Isaiah 11:1-10). (Jesus Christ as the root of David and Jesse, is to reign over the Gentiles too.)

6. Faith that appropriates (v 13)

- a) The God of hope is to fill the believer with joy and peace in the sphere of believing. Faith is the means.
- b) Faith appropriates salvation, restoration to fellowship, filling of the Holy Spirit, doctrine, promises.

7. Knowing the operation of grace (v 14,15)

- a) A mature believer realises all he has is because of God's grace and he operates his life on the basis of grace.
- b) Grace is manifested in the believer in:
 - i) Salvation (Ephesians 2:8,9)
 - ii) Prayer (Hebrews 4:16)

- iii) Suffering (2 Corinthians 12:9)
- iv) Releasing power (2 Timothy 2:1)
- v) Growth and stability (2 Peter 3:18)
- vi) Restoration and fellowship (Hebrews 12:15; 1 John 1:9)
- vii) Producing works (1 Corinthians 15:10; 2 Corinthians 6:1; 9:9)
- viii) Christian way of life (2 Corinthians 1:12; Hebrews 12:28).

OLD AGE

1. Old Age is a time when we should be even more useful for the Lord than we have been able to be before, as we have the chance to use time that previously has been used in work. The age at which "old age" starts in the church is sixty years of age. 1 Timothy 5:9.

2. The Bible makes it clear that the elderly are to be respected.

[a] The elders are to be stood up for by the younger in respect for their age. Leviticus 19:32

[b] Children are to listen to their parents in the Lord, they are not to despise them if they do not agree with them, but prove they are right by their own good deeds. Proverbs 23:22.

[c] Respect is demanded of the believer for the aged. 1 Timothy 5:1,2.

[d] The army is to protect the elderly from evil invaders of the land. Deuteronomy 28:50, 2 Chronicles 36:17.

3. There are problems with old age.

[a] Some will be unteachable, thinking they know everything. Ecclesiastes 4:13-15.

[b] Old people are helpless and often need care. John 21:18.

[c] They are vulnerable to disease. 1 Kings 15:23.

[d] They will be victims to their own fears. Psalm 71:9.

[e] If they have been disobedient they will feel great terror. Psalm 6:7, 32:3.

4. If the elderly have walked close to the Lord for many years the doctrine in their souls is a bank they can draw on in their old age.

[a] Doctrine is profitable in old age. Proverbs 22:6, Psalm 71:17,18.

[b] Blessings of maturity are there in old age. Psalm 148:12-14.

[c] They have great security and blessing in old age. Psalms 37:25, Proverbs 17:6, 20:29.

[d] They have dying grace with the Lord. Job 42:17, 1 Chronicles 23:1, 29:28, Isaiah 46:4.

5. In the Millennial kingdom old age is blessed. Isaiah 65:20, Joel 2:28, Zechariah 8:4.

6. Standards for old people's service are found in God's Word. Titus 2:2,3.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL LIFE

1. DEFINITION: Life belonging to the ages (Greek word aionios). This is the life of the believer who had a beginning in time but whose life will continue through the other side of death into the infinite future.

2. Mankind were created for eternity. God's purpose was to create a being to enjoy fellowship with forever. 2 Peter 3: 9.

3. The issue for entry into eternal life is faith in Christ. The choice for man is clearly stated in John 3:36, 5:24, Acts 13:46, Galatians 6:8, Matthew 25:6.

4. Those who are serious about life and concerned about death ask about it. Matthew 13:40-43, 19:16, Mark 10:17, Luke 10:25, 18:18.

5. The Lord's words provide the answer to the questions about eternal life. John 6:68, Romans 5:20, 21, Romans 6:22, 23.

It is the Lord who gives eternal life, John 5:39, 40, 12:50.

6. The Lord gives eternal life to those who believe on him, John 10:28, 17:2,

The door to fellowship and all that goes with it is opened by faith in him as Saviour. John 3:15,16, Acts 13:48, John 6:40, 47.

"To Eat His Flesh and Drink His Blood" is graphic language to picture his work and our need to appropriate it for ourselves. John 6:54, 4:14.

7. While it may only be fully known in heaven the believer may grasp a glimpse of eternal life here and now by way of anticipation and relationship. Knowing God is a glimpse of eternal life now, John 17:3, and fellowship with him is the joy of every believer now and forever. 1 John 1:1-4, 5:10-12, 20, 1 Timothy 6:12, 19.

8. Eternal life is received in full at the resurrection/rapture when we all receive our new bodies from the Lord. Rewards are received then to enjoy with the Lord forever. We are all urged to live each day with the eternal life perspective in mind, thinking of our place with the Lord forever. Matthew 19:29, 30, Mark 10:29-31, John 12:25, John 4:36, Romans 2:6,7.

9. Eternal Life is the believers hope, associated with the Rapture and Resurrection, and should be on our mind through each day, as it sets us apart from the unbelievers who have no such hope. Philippians 3:20, 21, Titus 1:2, 2:13, 3:7, 1 Thessalonians 2:19, 4:13, 1 Peter 1:3,

10. The assurance of eternal life is grounded in the promise of God given through Christ. 1 John 2:24,25, 1 John 5:13-15.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY

1. When a person truly trusts Jesus Christ for salvation, he is saved forever. He cannot lose his salvation.

2. POSITIONAL APPROACH (Romans 8:38-39)
We are united with Christ ("in Christ"). Absolutely nothing can separate us from the love of God which is in Christ.

3. LOGICAL APPROACH (Romans 8:32, Romans 5)
As unbelievers we are enemies of God (Romans 5), as believers we are his children. If he did the most for his enemies what will he do for his children? This excludes loss of salvation for he saved us while we were his enemies.

4. GOD'S HANDS APPROACH (John 10:28, Psalm 37:24)
Neither shall anyone seize them out of my hand. God is all powerful.

5. EXPERIENTIAL APPROACH (2 Timothy 2:12-13)
If we deny Christ He is going to deny us rewards (context=suffering and rewards). If we renounce Him, HE REMAINS FAITHFUL. The believer is in Christ and Christ indwells the believer. He cannot deny Himself.

6. THE FAMILY APPROACH (Galatians 3:26, John 1:12)
When you believe in Christ you are born again as a child of God. You cannot be unborn, once a child always a child.

7. THE INHERITANCE APPROACH (1 Peter 1:4-5)
We have an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled which fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for us who are kept by the power of God. Perfect tense - it will always be reserved, since it is kept by God, not us.

8. THE SOVEREIGNTY APPROACH (2 Peter 3:9, Jude 24)
He is not willing that any should perish - refers to the whole human race (2 Peter 3:9) Now unto him who is able to keep you from falling (from perishing). Once you are saved, it is His will that you don't perish.

9. THE BODY APPROACH (1 Corinthians 12:21, Colossians 1:18)
Christ is the head, we are the members of the body. If any are lost, the body of Christ is incomplete.

10. THE GREEK TENSE APPROACH (Ephesians 2:8-9)
"For by Grace are ye saved". Perfect tense of the verb "sozo". For by Grace have you been saved in the past so that you go on being saved forever.

11. THE SEALING MINISTRY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT APPROACH (2 Corinthians 1:22, Ephesians 1:13, 4:30)
In the ancient world the seal was a guarantee for protection. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit guarantees our security.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY - HEBREWS CHAPTER 6

1. SCRIPTURE
"Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrines of Christ let us go on unto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, and the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands and of resurrection of the dead and of eternal judgment. And this we will do, if God permit. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost. And have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the world to come. If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh and put him to an open shame

2. APPARENT PROBLEM Are these people believers and if they are can a believer lose his salvation?

3. EVALUATION

- a) In Hebrews chapter 5 verses 1 To 10 the writer of the book to the Hebrews has been teaching them the advanced doctrine of the High Priesthood of Christ and his comparison with Melchizedek.
- b) In Hebrews 5:11 the writer of Hebrews breaks off this theme telling his readers "they are dull of bearing".
- c) Further in verses 12-14 of chapter 5 he chides them for not growing up "they need milk (like babies) and not meat (like adults)" v12, milk is for those unskilled in the scriptures v13, whilst meat is for the mature v.14
- d) In fact Hebrews 6:9 and following continues to encourage them to get back on the right track. In Hebrews 6:9 they are called "beloved" - a term for believers.
- e) In Hebrews chapter 7 the writer of Hebrews returns to his dissertation on Melchizedek.
- f) Hebrews 5:11 to 6:19 can be seen as a passage in parenthesis, a scriptural aside to chasten his Jewish readers who are within 3 years of 70 AD at which time the Jews will go unto dispersion.

4. GRAMMAR Hebrews 6:1-6 Two points of syntax.

- a) In the Greek language when a list is given, rather than repeating the list again the first item of the list is repeated to indicate that the list is to be repeated c.f. "repentance" and v.1 and v.6
- b) The action of the participle in the Greek language always precedes the action of the main verb.
- c) The layout of v.1-6 is:- a list of 6 basic doctrines followed by 5 participles followed by the first doctrine portraying the list again with the main verb - "impossible to renew" "impossible to renew" - is made up of a noun being used as a verb which in the Greek gives tremendous emphasis to the verb - it can be translated "totally impossible to renew"

5. THE BASIC DOCTRINE LIST v. 1-4

Therefore leaving the basic doctrines let us go on to perfection (maturity) not going back to the basics.

- a) Repentance from good works (human good)
- b) Faith towards God (trusting in the promises)
- c) Doctrine of Baptisms (outward witness)
- d) Laying on of hands (commissioning)
- e) Resurrection of the dead (eventual resurrection)
- f) Eternal judgment (the fate of the unbeliever)

REPENTANCE in verse 6 is used as the key word for the list of 6 basic doctrines.

6. THE FIVE PARTICIPLES v. 4-6 The action of the participles precede the action of "impossible to renew".

- a) Who were once enlightened - AORIST PASSIVE participle of PHOTIZO. Here the passive voice shows that the subject (the person) received enlightenment. The aorist tense shows the point of time when the believer knew some doctrine. They received knowledge through bible teaching.
- b) "and have tasted of the heavenly gift" - AORIST MIDDLE participle of GEUOMA1 This is the same verb and same morphology as in Hebrews 2:9 where "Christ tasted death for all men." Aorist tense point of salvation, middle voice of benefit to us tasting salvation - believing in Christ.
- c) "and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit" -AORIST PASSIVE participle of GINOMAI - "to become" this phrase becomes "and became at a point of time partakers of the Holy Spirit" - this refers to the baptism of the Holy Spirit at the point of salvation. "partaker" means partner or sharer.
- d) "and have tasted the good word of God" - AORIST MIDDLE participle of GEUOMAI - this draws together every time a person learns the word of God. "and the powers of the world to come deals with their experience of the outpouring of the Holy Spirit at the start of the church age.
- e) "if they shall fall away " - AORIST ACTIVE participle of PARAPIPTO - literally having fallen away. PARA - immediate source, PIPTO - to fall. The person who falls away does so of his own free will. active voice - the person does the action.

7. MAIN VERB

"it is impossible" - "it is" does not occur in the original. "Impossible" is a noun instead of a verb which gives it double emphasis. Literal translation - Impossible, totally impossible. (v.4)

"to renew again" - present active infinitive - renew or restore to fellowship. (v.6)

Looking at the participles these people:-

were once enlightened - they are saved tasted the heavenly gift - they are saved partakers of the Holy Spirit - they are saved tasted the good word of God - they are saved

But these things have been debased by the fifth participle - "shall fall away"

"unto repentance" - with reference to repentance, the first word in the list of basic doctrines.

"seeing" - does not occur in the original and represents two participles which literally translated mean "so long as".

"they crucify to themselves" - how? - by offering animal sacrifices in the temple in Jerusalem.

"and put him to an open shame this means from the source of your own negative attitude you have shamed Christ.

In verse 7 the believer producing divine good (herbs) is shown whilst under the provision of God (rain off) this being contrasted with the believer in a carnal state producing human good (thorns and briars) in verse 8.

8. CONCLUSION

The people in Hebrews 6:1-6 are habitually carnal believers who are unable to understand the basic doctrines they once knew let alone the advanced doctrines of the High Priesthood of Christ. You cannot learn God's Word whilst carnal. Their negative attitude is constantly demonstrated by their offering of animal sacrifices in the temple. In v.9 the writer tells them "But beloved, we are persuaded of better things of you." They are urged to become spiritual again.

SECTION 2: - THE NEW JERUSALEM

Having looked at Heaven we have discovered what a wonderful place it is. But just in case you have your doubts and are financially minded think of Heaven as a place where there is no money and no tax! Can you imagine what a stampede there would be if a country decided to abolish money and taxation! People would be falling over themselves in the rush to move there! And yet when it comes to the eternal place of Heaven many people think " Oh, I don't know, I don't think I want to go there."

However, there is still one aspect of Heaven that deserves study and that is the city of the **New Jerusalem** described in Revelation 3:12 and also chapters 21 through to 22:5.

In these final two chapters we have the conclusion focusing on the anticipation of eternal conditions. No doubt the infinite joys and blessings of heaven are beyond the grasp of our present finite minds. Future anticipation, like prophecy, always involves unknown factors for the simple reason that we have no means for fully understanding these things.

Eternity is impossible to understand and explain in human language. Instead, it is described in terms of precious gems, showing great beauty.

God's Holy City, the New Jerusalem, is first mentioned by the Apostle John in Revelation 3:12. **Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.**

To the believer in verse 12 the Lord promises to remember them. In the ancient world the deeds of the great people in a community were inscribed on the pillars of the most important buildings, usually a temple so that they would be recorded as long as the settlement lasted. The Lord will especially honour us if we are faithful to Him. The deeds that we do in the power of the Spirit will be recorded. He is going to write the name of God, the New Jerusalem and a new name. This talks of possession of the believer by God and His protection. We are in enemy territory but in fellowship with God we are invincible.

The writing of the name on the believer means that we are permanently with God and He with us.

KEY WORDS

Overcometh	Nikao	To gain the victory [Present Active Participle]
Will make	Poieo	Make, Do, Provide [Future Active Indicative]
Pillar	Stulos	A Pillar, Column
Temple	Naos	A Dwelling Place, Inner Sanctuary
Go out	Exerchomai	Go out, Spread abroad [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Write	Grapho	To Write, Inscribe [Future Active Indicative]
Name	Onoma	Name
City	Polis	City
New	Kainos	New, Fresh, Recent, Newly Made
Cometh down	Katabaino	Come down, Descend [Present Active Participle]
Out of	Ek	From
Heaven	Ouranos	Heaven, Sky, Air
Write Upon	-	Not in the original

ANALYSIS AND BACKGROUND

The word used for temple here is a dwelling place rather than "Heiron" which means Temple, sacred or priestly edifice.

In the ancient world the deeds of the great people in a community were inscribed on the pillars of the most important buildings, usually a temple, so that they would be recorded as long as the settlement lasted.

The concept of a pillar has two meanings; one of being firmly fixed and the second of giving stability to the building. Philadelphia was a city of earthquakes but its church outlasted the other six churches mentioned in these two chapters.

The believer receives this triple name (of God, of the city of God, of Christ) on his forehead just as the high-priest wore the name of Jehovah upon his forehead

The writing of the name on the believer relates to the fact that we are in a permanent relationship with God

APPLICATION

1. The Lord will especially honour us if we are faithful to Him.
2. The deeds that we do in the power of the Spirit will be recorded.
3. We have great security and great stability because of our position in Christ
4. When we get to heaven we will be forever with the Lord.

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: - DESTINY OF BELIEVERS [see page 34]

CHRISTIAN LIFE: CONSECRATION

1. Consecration means full surrender of self to God. (Romans 6:13)
2. This is the attitude of "denying self" and "not my will, but yours be done" (Matthew 16:24, 26:39, Galatians 2:20).
3. This is the only acceptable gift to God. (Romans 12:1,2)
4. The consecration of the Temple is a picture of the believer's life: the Outer Court (the body), the Holy Place (the soul) and the Holy of Holies (spirit)
5. You are indwelt by the Holy Spirit, and therefore must be set apart as a holy vessel (Romans 12:1-2 cf 1 Kings 8:1-11)

CHRISTIAN LIFE - POSITION IN CHRIST

1. We have a position with Christ rather than a position with the cosmos system. We are separated from the world and are different from them. We have a new position in Christ - Ephesians 2:6
2. We have a new position of partnership with Christ, we are never alone. - Colossians 3:4, John 17. We have a communion with him. He says that he will never put us in a situation without a way of escape. The way of escape is through Christ.
3. We are workers together with God, we are in his service - 2 Corinthians 3:9, 1:9, 6:1
4. We are ministers of a new covenant, we have a new message to man. 1 Corinthians 3:6, 6:4
5. We are ambassadors for Christ - 2 Corinthians 5:20
6. We are living epistles, we are letters to a lost and unsaved world. Our lives should be such that Christ should be read from the book of our lives. Our life and lips should tell of Christ and Him alone.
7. We are members of the Royal family - Galatians 6:10, 1 Peter 2:9
8. We are united with the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit:
 - a) We are in the Father, he is in us - Ephesians 4:6,
 - b) We are in Christ - John 14:20,
 - c) He is in us - Colossians 1:26,
 - d) We are in the Spirit and he is in us - Romans 8:9.
 - e) We are united forever to God.
 - f) We are not part of a universal soul. That is new age.
 - g) We have been entered into a living union with a personal God.
9. We are members of his body, branches of his vine, living stones, his building, sheep of his fold, part of his bride, priests in his kingdom, saints set apart for his glory.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: STABILITY

1. God is able to keep us and bless us (Ephesians 3:20, Hebrews 7:25).
2. Stability comes when we know God; when we have grown up in his Word. Maturity brings with it stability (2Peter 3:18, 2Timothy 1:12).
3. The alternative to a stable life of faith is to be tossed about by every pressure; this occurs when there is no doctrinal application in the life (James 1:6, Ephesians 4:14, Revelation 3:8).
4. Believers need stability to stand fast against the wiles of Satan who is a danger to those with no doctrine: We are told to:
 - a) Stand fast in the word 1Corinthians 16:13.
 - b) Stand fast in our liberty Galatians 5:1 cf. Romans 14:1ff, 8:9-13.
 - c) Stand fast in one spirit (no pettiness) Philippians 1:27.
 - d) Stand fast in the Lord (in fellowship) Philippians 4:1.
 - e) Stand fast in doctrine 2 Thessalonians 2:5, 16,17.
5. Strength and stability comes in a close relationship with the Lord. By faith we stand: 2 Corinthians 1:24, Psalm 59:17, 62:7, 144:1.
6. God has supreme power at His fingertips for us. Isaiah 59:1.
7. Our faith should stand secure in this power, for we are kept by it in all things, therefore we should be confident. 1Corinthians 2:5, 1Peter 1:5, John 16:33.
8. God is able to make us stand through the work of the Holy Spirit upon the word in our lives. Romans 14:4, Jude 24.
9. Strength and stability come from the impact of the Holy Spirit's work upon the word in our life as we believe and apply it. e.g. Sarah Hebrews 11:11, Paul 2 Corinthians 12:8-10.
10. Profile of the stable believer under pressure 2 Peter 1:3-16.

1. WHY IS THIS CITY CALLED THE NEW JERUSALEM?

- This is a contrast with the Jerusalem that we see today and through history. The name "Jerusalem" is a Hebrew translation of an earlier word "Urushalim" from the Middle Bronze Age 2000-1600 BC.
- The word means foundation of Shalem and indicates "complete" or "prosperous" or "peaceful".
- The purpose of Jerusalem was to show the Glory of God and His peace, but unfortunately, it has not been very successful. The New Jerusalem is holy while the earthly Jerusalem is unholy.
- It is called the "holy city" (Revelation 21:2).
- "Great" (Revelation 21:10).
- "Heavenly" (Hebrews 12:22).
- "Wife of the Lamb". (Revelation 21:9).

The Lord gives us some idea of the New Jerusalem in Revelation 21:1-22:5.

To help understand this topic, think in terms of this saying:

- His eyes were as big as dinner plates!
- Eyes and dinner plates are physical realities.
- These two realities combined are impossible, but they do show an emotion of surprise or fear.

The New Jerusalem is a reality, which also shows spiritual truth. IT IS A BLEND OF BOTH THINGS.

I HOPE THIS HELPS!

The Apostle John in Revelation 21:1 records the following:

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

QUESTION: DOES THIS VERSE REFER TO THE MILLENIUM OR ETERNITY?

There has been some debate about this by very learned theologians. I like Dr Harry Ironside who was saturated in Scripture from childhood. He puts forward this view:

“That it refers to the Millennium because of two prophesies; Is 65:17 and Is 66:22.”

- Prophecy is mainly concerned with events up to and including the Millennium. Isaiah is no exception.

However, he adds the comment: “Now the two chapters from which these verses are quoted have to do with the Millennium, but I take it that we have here faith’s telescope looking out, even in that past dispensation, to the unchanging and unchangeable condition that shall abide forever.”

(Revelation, An Ironside Expository Commentary, H.A. Ironside, Kregel Publications, pages 201, 202).

W MacDonald from his excellent Believer’s Bible Commentary puts forward the view that the Millennium and the Eternal State are similar so it is not surprising if they seem to merge sometimes in the Apostle John’s writings. (Believer’s Bible Commentary, William MacDonald, Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1989, page 2379).

Therefore in verse 1:

“a new heaven and a new earth” refers to the Eternal State and not to be confused with Isaiah 65:17-25 which speaks of the Millennium because sin and death are still present. Sin and death do not exist in the Eternal State. In Revelation 21:1, they refer to the Eternal State.

Isaiah 65:17 For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.

It’s useful to remember that the Millennial Kingdom is only the beginning of glory, for it is the ending of the history of this universe, the ending of time and space, and the entry into a new heavens and a new earth.

Isaiah’s content from here on covers both the millennial time frame and eternity, with the new heavens and the new earth, in a mixed presentation.

ANSWER: I THINK IT IS A PICTURE OF THE END OF THE MILLENNIUM, THEN BLENDS INTO ETERNITY AFTER THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT.

In other words:

Revelation 21:1 Refers to the MILLENIUM.

Revelation 21:2 and following refers to the ETERNAL STATE.

The phrase “no more sea “ could mean two things.

- The earth we live on now needs the sea and oceans for all life to function. In eternity, from the end of the Millennium and beyond, the Lord God is the only source and sustainer of life.

AND:

- That there are no more Gentile Nations. In the Book of Revelation, land is taken to refer the nation of Israel, and sea refers to Gentile nations.

THREE NEW THINGS IN HEAVEN. Revelation 21:1-2

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

KEY WORDS

Saw	Eido	See [Aorist Active Indicative]
New	Kainos	New, Fresh, Recent, Newly Made
Heaven	Ouranos	Heaven, Sky, Air
Earth	Ge	Earth
First	Protos	Foremost, First
Passed Away	Parerchomai	Come or Go Along [Aorist Active Indicative]
Was	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Sea	Thalassa	Sea
Holy	Hagios	Separate, Set Apart
From	Apo	From The Ultimate Source
New	Kairos	New
Coming Down	Katabaino	Descend, Come down [Present Active Participle]
Out Of	Ex	Out Of
Prepared	Hetiomazo	To Make Ready [Perfect Passive Participle]
Bride	Numphe	Bride
Adorned	Kosmeo	Adorn, [Perfect Passive Participle]
Husband	Aner	A Man

- New = Gk kainos = newly made, fresh.
- Heaven = the atmosphere and space. Not the dwelling place of God.

We should first recognize that in the original language two words are translated "new." First we have "neos", which means new in time, recently made. This is not used here.

Instead we have the word "kainos", meaning renewed or renovated. The suggestion may be that while the present creation is cleansed by fire 2 Peter. 3:7-12, God brings out of it new conditions. This is in fact Paul's teaching of Romans 8:18-23. This would be similar to what happened to the Earth before and after Noah's Flood.

ANALYSIS AND BACKGROUND

New Heaven. - This gives us some idea of the drastic effects of the rebellion of Satan and the fall of man. Our sins have indeed reached as high as the heavens.

This does not, however, refer to the third heaven, the abode of God. This is rather the atmosphere and universe of creation.

- New Earth. - Peter tells us "the earth and it's works will be burned up" 2 Peter. 3:10. The word he uses is "luo", which literally means "release, set free." So the world is renovated and set free of the works and ravages of evil. This occurs after the Millennium.

It will be like taking your old car and getting it totally reconditioned to bring it back to an "as new" condition.

The inhabitants of the new earth will be the Old Testament saints and the regenerate of Israel. (Rev 21:24 – 26).

The New Jerusalem will be the place of worship where the nations bring their honour and glory.

Revelation 21:2 **And I, John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.**

KEY WORDS.

"apo" (from)- shows that the new Jerusalem comes from the ultimate source of God

"prepared": Verb "hetiomazo" is in the perfect tense which means that it was prepared in the past with a result that it continues for ever.

As for verse 1 the word “kainos”, meaning renewed or renovated is used.

- During the Millennium, the New Jerusalem is hidden from view. However, when the new heavens and new earth are created and all traces of sin and evil have been eradicated, then the city descends into the view of the new earth, probably like how we see a full moon today.
- This amazing event happens after the 1000 years of Christ’s rule on earth, and yet New Jerusalem is seen as fresh and as lovely as a bride.
- This is the first time the city is actually seen from the Earth.
- We will go to the New Jerusalem at the rapture.
- This will be our eternal home.
- We will commute between Earth and New Jerusalem during the Millennium.
- It is a Holy city because we have been made holy in Christ. There is no other way to be holy. Also The Lord Jesus is there too, so it is truly a Holy city!
- The New Jerusalem is the temple (v22) where Israel and the gentile nations of the Earth will go to worship. (v 24).
- This is the city Abraham waited for in Hebrews 11:17.
- It is the city that we look forward to (Hebrews 13:14).
- There is no temple because God dwells in it. (v22).

This is actually easier for us to understand than the Apostle John, who had to describe something that must have blown his mind. At least we in the 21st Century know space stations and have seen spacecraft landing, even if only on science-fiction movies. But not the Apostle John!

New Jerusalem. It is the church in its new and perfect state.

The heavenly Jerusalem is the eternal home of the saints that Jesus said He would prepare in John 14:1-3.

John 14:1-3. **“Let not your heart be troubled; you believe in God, believe also in Me. In my Father’s house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go to prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also.”**

Key words.

Mansions: Greek word is “moni” meaning abiding place. There are many places to live.

“I go to prepare a place for you.” In other words a special custom prepared place perfectly suited to our personality and likes. The Lord Jesus prepares our places personally. It is not a delegated job to an angel.

“I will come again and receive you to Myself.” This is the first time in God’s Word where the Lord talks about taking someone off the Earth and receiving them in Heaven. The Old Testament saints were expecting the Kingdom of Heaven to be set up on the Earth. Having heaven on Earth was the hope of the Old Testament.

Our glorious hope as the New Testament church is for the Lord Jesus to return and take us back to our specially prepared Heavenly home.

APPLICATION

If Christians were interested in how and where they are going to live in eternity, maybe they would be more serious about how they live while on Earth.

The city is compared to a bride and is actually called "The bride, the wife of the Lamb", in verse 9.

- It is interesting that in John’s day contemporary coins called Jerusalem the “holy city”.

The holy city has three functions:

1. It will be the personal residence of the Lord Jesus Christ.
2. It fulfils the promise to Abraham because it's a city provided in grace.
3. This is the headquarters of the universe for eternity Hebrews 11:9-10.

APPLICATION

We, as church age believers, are the earmarked citizens of New Jerusalem when we leave this earth! The inhabitants of the new earth will be the Old Testament saints and the regenerate of Israel.

The universe in which we now live is going to be completely destroyed. The Greek word "Kainos" means new in quality, or new in character rather than in substance. The very same term is used of the unregenerate believer, who becomes a "new creation" (I Corinthians, 5:11) where they do not lose their personal identity but have it transformed instead.

So in the final change of the physical universe the Earth does not lose its identity but will pass away as to its outward and recognizable form and be renewed in a fresh and more glorious one" (cf. Revelation 20:11).

There are three heavens and three earths in the Bible, Genesis 1:1, 2 Peter 3:5, the restored earth, Genesis 1:3; 2 Peter 3:7, and the new earth Revelation 21:1 and 2 Peter 3:13.

What God can do with our present universe, in preparation for His eternal Kingdom, we can only guess. Yet perhaps we have a suggestion in the nature of the resurrection body of the saved where corruptible matter by the energizing power of the Holy Spirit takes on a wondrous character, being made glorious, powerful and imperishable (I Corinthians. 15:42-44).

DOCTRINES

JERUSALEM

1. Jerusalem is the Holy City of three monotheistic faiths.

a) JUDAISM: Jerusalem has always been the focus of the Jewish homeland as it was the capital of the first Jewish kingdom. The Western Wall (the Wailing Wall) is a remnant of the great temple, built by King Herod and is the most sacred of all Jewish shrines.

b) CHRISTIANITY: For Christians, Jerusalem is the site of Jesus Christ's last days on earth. It is the place of His trial and crucifixion, and also of His resurrection.

c) ISLAM: The Arabs call Jerusalem "Al Quds", which means "The Noble (or Holy) Sanctuary". After Mecca and Medina, it is the holiest city in the Muslim world. On the place where the Temple stood now stands the Dome of the Rock (or mosque of Omar). It is built over a rock from where Mohammed is said to have ascended to Heaven.

2. The name 'Jerusalem' is sometimes abbreviated to "Salem" which is the Hebrew word for peace (Genesis 14:18; Psalm 76:2). Jerusalem means "City of Peace" (Psalm 122:6,7; Isaiah 66:12; Haggai 2:9).

3. It was the city of Melchizedek (Genesis 14:18).

4. Although the Israelites captured its "suburbs", they never took the citadel of Mount Zion (Judges 1:8,21 ; 19:12; Joshua 15:63). This fortress was called Jebus, after its inhabitants the Jebusites, descendants of Hittites and Amorites (Ezekiel 16:3). It was finally taken by King David and renamed City of David (2 Samuel 5:6-9).

5. It was a suitable place for a capital as it had not played a role in the history of any of the tribes and was not in any of the tribes' territory, but on the boundary between Benjamin and Judah (Joshua 15:8; 18:16).

6. It was a strong fortress and had its own water supply in the spring Gihon. This could be reached from the city through a tunnel (2 Samuel 5:8), later improved by King Hezekiah (2 Kings 20:20; 2 Chronicles 32:30).

7. The real spiritual meaning of Jerusalem began when King David brought the Ark of the Covenant to the City of David on Mount Zion (2 Samuel 6:16). Zion became synonymous with Jerusalem as the place where God dwelt among His people. (Psalms 48:1-3; 50:2; 87:2,3; 132:13,14; 137:5,6; 1 Kings 12:26-28)

8. Jerusalem the "City of Peace", was the scene of many battles and it changed hands many times during its 4,000 year history. Since 1967 it has been back in Jewish hands. (Luke 21:24)

9. ITS FUTURE:

- a) A new temple is to be built on the old temple site. The Antichrist will enter this temple to declare himself God. (2Thessalonians 2:4)
- b) The armies of all nations will be drawn against her. Its inhabitants will suffer terribly but they will be delivered by the Lord. (Zechariah 14:1-9)
- c) The Lord will enter the city through the East Gate (Golden Gate) which, at present, is bricked in. (Ezekiel 44:1,2; Psalm 24:7-9)
- d) Jerusalem will be the capital during the Millennium. (Zechariah 2:10-13; 8:22; Isaiah 2:3,4)
- e) But this Jerusalem is only a shadow of things to come. (Hebrews 11:10,16). After the Millennium there will be a new Jerusalem coming down out of heaven. (Hebrews 12:22; Galatians 4:26; Revelation 3:12; 21:2,10).

CHURCH AND ISRAEL

The Church is different to Israel.

1. The Jews started with Abraham (Genesis 12:1-3). The Church started at Pentecost. (Acts 2; Galatians 3:26-28)
2. Israel was promised blessings on earth. (Deuteronomy 28:1-14) The Church is promised blessings in heavenly places. (Ephesians 1:3; Hebrews 3:1)
3. Israel's relationship to God was based on a Covenant. (Genesis 17:7,8) The Church's relationship to God is based on new birth. (John 1:12,13; 1 Peter 1:23)
4. Israel's prophecy is mainly in the Old Testament. Prophecy of the Church is only in the New Testament.
5. Israel worshipped at Jerusalem. (Psalm 122:1-4) The Church worships where two or three are gathered together in Christ's name. (Matthew 18:20)
6. Israel lived under the law. (Ezekiel 20:10-12) The Church is under grace (John 1:17; Romans 6:14).
7. Israel's destiny is with Palestine. (Isaiah 60:18-21) The Church will be removed from the earth. (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18)
8. Christ is King and Messiah to Israel. Christ is Head and Bridegroom to the Church.
9. Israel contained Jews only. The Church is made up of both Jews and Gentiles.

CHURCH: BRIDE OF CHRIST

1. The Body of Christ is being formed on the earth during the Church Age. (Ephesians 1:22-23, 2:16, 4:4-5, 5:23, Colossians 1:18, 1:24, 2:19).
2. It is being completed by entering every believer of the Church Age into union with Christ. (1 Corinthians 12:12-14)
3. When the body is completed the Rapture occurs. (1 Thessalonians 4:16-18, 1 Corinthians 15:51-7. Compared with Revelation 19:6-8, Zechariah 13:2 and 1 Thessalonians 3:13)
4. During the tribulation on earth the bride is being dressed in heaven.
 - a) For ultimate sanctification - the resurrection body. (1 Corinthians 15:51-7, Philippians 3:21, 1 John 3:1,2).
 - b) The bride is prepared by being cleansed from all human good. (1 Corinthians 3:12-15)
 - c) The bride no longer possesses a sinful nature (Revelation 19:7-8)
5. The Bride returns in triumph with Christ at the Second Advent. (1 Thessalonians 3:13)
6. Upon the return of the bride and groom judgment occurs. (Psalm 110:1)
 - a) Disarming of demons (Colossians 2:15)
 - b) Satan is imprisoned for 1,000 years. (Revelation 20:1-3)
 - c) Jesus Christ casts demons into prison Zechariah 13:2, Colossians 2:15, 1 Corinthians 15:24,25)
7. Coronation of the Groom, Jesus Christ is Crowned King of the World. (Revelation 19:6)
8. Wedding Supper of the Lamb. (Revelation 19:7-9)
 - a) Marriage occurred in heaven, supper to take place on earth. (Matthew 25:1-13)
 - b) Wedding supper described in detail (Revelation 19:6-9)

- c) Four groups involved in this supper:-
- i) The Groom - Jesus Christ.
 - ii) The Friends of the Groom - Old Testament Saints (John 3:29)
 - iii) The Bride - Church Age Believers.
 - iv) The Friends of the Bride - Tribulation believers, i.e. those who have known the Bride and become believers. (Matthew 25:1-13)

KINGDOM: MILLENNIAL KINGDOM

1. "Thy will be done on earth, " will be fulfilled in the Millennium. (Matthew 6:10)

2. The Kingdom is the Millennium, the first 1,000 years of Jesus' eternal reign. It will be after the second advent, on the old earth. (Revelation 20:4-6)
 - a) Promised (2 Samuel 7:8-17, Psalm 89:20-33)
 - b) Prophesied (Isaiah 2:1-5, 2:11, 12, 35, 55, 56, 62:11)
 - c) Presented (Matthew, Mark, Luke) Israel, not the church)
 - d) Postponed Epistles of New Testament (for church age)
 - e) Proclaimed (Revelation 10) (Angelic herald) (Revelation 11:1-14) (Human heralds)
 - f) Plagiarized (Revelation 13)
 - g) Perfected (Revelation 11:15-19)

3. Issues relating to the Kingdom
 - a) The Character of God - will He keep His word to Israel? Yes. Jesus Christ will reign.
 - b) Unconditional Covenant - will He keep Covenant? Yes. Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, New - all fulfilled in the Millennium.
 - c) Dispersion of Israel - will He recover them again? Yes. At the second advent.
 - d) Advent - will He return to earth at the worst period in history? Yes. At the end of the Tribulation.
 - e) Millennial - The Kingdom of Jesus Christ is eternal, why the emphasis on the first 1,000 years? Jesus will do what Satan has been trying to do for 6,000 years; He will create perfect environment in an instant, as a demonstration to prove that perfect environment is not the answer; regeneration is.

4. Principles from Micah 4:1-8
 - a) The Kingdom will be supreme. (Micah 4:1)
 - b) The Kingdom will be universal. (Micah 4:2)
 - c) The Kingdom will be peaceful. (Micah 4:3)
 - d) The Kingdom will secure universal prosperity.(Micah 4:4-5)
 - e) The nation of Israel ruled by the Lord for the Kingdom. (Micah 4:6-8)

PROPHECY - PRESENTED WITH GIFTS

Scripture - Isaiah 60:1-6 (698 BC):.

1. Like many of the prophecies in the Scriptures, this prophecy has two fulfilments: one concerning the first advent as portrayed by the Magi, the there after the second advent at the end of the millennium.

2. Given in the reign of Hezekiah, this prophecy must have given comfort to the kingdom of Judah seeing that Israel or Samaria had been conquered and dispersed by Assyria only a few years previously and the Assyrian threat to Judah was ever present.

Fulfilment - Matthew 2:1,11 (4 BC): 'Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem. "And when they were come into the house they saw the young child with Mary his mother and fell down and worshipped him and when they had opened their treasures they presented unto him gifts: gold and frankincense and myrrh.

The wise men, the Magi, were Gentiles who came to worship Jesus Christ the King. The gifts brought by the Magi portrayed different facets of the humanity of Christ:

- (a) Gold - showing Jesus Christ the King.
- (b) Frankincense - Jesus Christ the Priest
- (c) Myrrh - Jesus Christ the Saviour.

It should be noted that the wise men came into the house and not the stable. The young child was about eighteen months old, as the Greek word for young child, "paidion", is used rather than that for a baby, "brephos".

Fulfilment - Revelation 21:23-26 (end of millennium): And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

The second fulfilment shows the New Jerusalem with kings and Gentiles coming to bring honour to the Lord of all. They walk in his light and bring their glory and honour to him.

2. WHEN DOES THE NEW JERUSALEM APPEAR? If you hold to a premillennial view the series of events are:

The next prophecy to be fulfilled is the Rapture of the church. This momentous event could happen at any time because no more prophecy needs to be fulfilled to allow it to occur. Current world events are pointing to the fact that it is very, very close.

After the Rapture is the Great Tribulation that lasts for seven years. This will be the most terrifying time in the whole of human history. Events in the Great Tribulation will lead to World War Three, otherwise known as Armageddon. Just as Israel is about to be destroyed, the Lord Jesus Christ returns. So the major events leading up to the New Jerusalem are:

1. The Second Advent.
2. The Millennial Reign of Christ. (The New Jerusalem is hidden from view).
3. The judgement of Satan. (Revelation 20:10).
4. The Great White Throne Judgement.
5. A new heaven and a new earth with the New Jerusalem descending from Heaven into view of the earth. (This is Eternity).

DOCTRINES

RAPTURE [see page 34]

CHURCH: SECOND ADVENT

1. Israel under dispersion no longer represents Christ on this earth.
2. Israel is replaced by the Church, the Body of Christ. (Acts 2:47, 1 Corinthians 12:12-14, Ephesians 1:22, 23, 2:16, 4:4, 5, 5:23, 24, 30-32, Colossians 1:18, 24, 2:19)
3. The Body of Christ is being completed by entering every believer of the Church Age into union with Christ. (Colossians 2:10, Hebrews 2:10)
4. When the Body is completed, the Rapture of the Church occurs. (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18)
5. Then the Body becomes the Bride, and is prepared for the Second Advent.
 - (a) The Bride receives a resurrection body like Christ's (1 Corinthians 15:51-57, Philippians 3:21, 1 John 3:1, 2)
 - (b) The Bride's old sin nature is removed. (Philippians 3:21)
 - (c) The Bride is cleansed from human good. (1 Corinthians 3:12-16)
6. The Bride returns in triumph with Christ at the Second Advent. (1 Thessalonians 3:13, Revelation 19:6-8)
7. Then follows the conquest-
 - (a) Satan imprisoned (Revelation 20:1-3)
 - (b) Demons removed from the earth. (Zechariah 13:2, 1 Corinthians 15:24, 25, Colossians 2:15)
8. The removal of the demons changes the environment of the earth and causes perfect conditions during the Millennium.
 - (a) Religion removed.
 - (b) False doctrine removed.

(c) Perfect environment restored.

DISPENSATIONS: THE TRIBULATION OR THE TIME OF JACOB'S TROUBLE

1. The Tribulation is actually the last seven years of the Age of Israel.
2. General Scripture (Revelation 4-19)
3. Limits: Rapture to Second Advent
4. Characteristics:
 - a) Length of Age - 7 years. (Daniel 9:27)
 - b) Means of Salvation - faith in Christ.
 - c) Scripture - completed Canon.
 - d) Evangelists - 144,000 Jewish evangelists (Revelation 7). Also angelic evangelists (Revelation 14:6-7)
 - e) Major judgments - a succession of judgments upon the unbelieving world (Matthew 24:21)
 - f) At death believers - Heaven (Revelation 15:12)
 - g) At death unbelievers - Torments, Hades.
 - h) Priesthood - specialised priesthood - Jews.
 - i) The Law - no Law (Matthew 5:17)
 - j) Holy Spirit - assists believers but does not indwell.
 - k) Environment - sinful - Antichrist and Satan rule the whole world.
 - l) Satan - in Heaven or on earth for first 3 1/2 years; cast down to earth for second 3 1/2 years (Revelation 12:9)
 - m) Rebellion - Armageddon, one world political and religious system
 - n) Spirituality- resting in the promises of God.
 - o) Three sets of Judgments - seals (Revelation 6), trumpets (Revelation 8), judgments (Revelation 15,16)

DISPENSATION OF THE MILLENNIUM

1. General Scripture: Many Old Testament passages, Revelation 20
2. Limits: Second Advent to Great White Throne Judgment
3. Characteristics:
 - a) Length of Age - 1,000 years.
 - b) Means of Salvation - Faith in Christ.
 - c) Scripture - the person of Christ.
 - d) Evangelists - the person of Christ.
 - e) Major Judgments
 - i) Baptism of Fire (Matthew 3:12, 24:36-41)
 - ii) Last Judgment (Revelation 20:11-15)
 - iii) Destruction of Universe (2 Peter 3:7-13)
 - f) Death extremely rare in the Millennium. Extended life span. (Isaiah 65:20)
 - g) At death, unbelievers - Torments.
 - h) Priesthood - Christ.
 - i) The Law - no Law, Jesus Christ has fulfilled the law. (Matthew 5:17)
 - j) Holy Spirit - universal indwelling of the believer. (Joel 2:28-29)
 - k) Environment - perfect (Isaiah 11:1-9)
 - l) Satan - chained in the abyss until the end of the Millennium (Revelation 20:2-3)
 - m) Rebellion - unbelievers at the end of the Age. (Revelation 20:7-9)
 - n) Spirituality - filling of the Holy Spirit (Joel 2:28,29)
 - o) No human religion - Satan bound - no influence on the earth. (Isaiah 2:3, John 8:44 cf Rev 20:1-3)
 - p) Israel -restored (Isaiah 35:3-10)
 - q) Universal peace (Psalm 46:9, Hosea 2:18, Micah 4:3)
 - r) Perfect government with Christ as King (Isaiah 11:1-5, Zechariah 14:9)
 - s) Universal prosperity (Psalm 72:7)
 - t) Universal knowledge of God. (Isaiah 11:9)
 - u) Radical changes in nature - restored to perfection as in the Garden of Eden
 - i) Mankind loosened from the bondage of sin. (Romans 8:19-22)
 - ii) Sin has no adverse effect on nature (Genesis 3:17-18 cf Isaiah 35:1-2,7)
 - iii) Animals will lose their ferocity (Isaiah 11:6-8, 65:25)
 - v) Millennium - begins with believers only.

ANGELS: SATAN'S DESTINY

1. Satan is called a "prince" indicating that he had his own power and followers. (John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, Ephesians 2:2, 2 Corinthians 4:4)
2. Yet he is still a creature, and is still ultimately subject to God (Job 1:12)
3. At the cross, Christ defeated Satan, as his main power was through sin and death. (John 12:27-32, Romans 5:12, 1 Corinthians 15:54-56, Colossians 2:14-15, Hebrews 2:14-15)
4. God purpose with the world is not yet complete - therefore the enforcement of Satan's defeat will not take place until the end of the Millennium (Hebrews 1:13, Revelation 20:10)
5. Satan's final judgment is sure:-
 - a) When he fell he was condemned, this was before (Genesis 1:2).
 - b) In the garden the certainty of God's judgment was announced. (Genesis 3:15)
 - c) The Cross was his final defeat. (John 12:31, Colossians 2:14-15)
 - d) In the midst of the Great Tribulation his access to heaven will be stopped. He will no longer be able to slander believers. (Revelation 12 :7-12)
 - e) At the Second Advent he is arrested and bound. (Revelation 20:1-3)
 - f) After the Millennium he is briefly released to lead the last great rebellion against God, and is finally cast into the Lake of Fire. (Revelation 20:10)
 - g) There are therefore four falls of Satan:-
 - i) from his place in eternity past to the earth with access to heaven.
 - ii) then that access is denied causing him to be restricted to the Earth.
 - iii) he is then contained in Hades for a thousand years.
 - iv) then his final fall into the Lake of Fire.
6. Satan has six abodes in his journey from the throne room of God to the Lake of Fire.
 - a) The Throne of God - Ezekiel 28:12
 - b) The Mineral Garden of Eden - Ezekiel 28:13
 - c) The Atmospheric Heavens - Ephesians 2:2, 6:12
 - d) The Earth - Revelation 12:7-12
 - e) The Abyss - Revelation 20:1-3
 - f) The Lake of Fire - Revelation 20:7-10

JUDGMENT: GREAT WHITE THRONE

1. The judgment of the Great White Throne is the last judgment. (Revelation 20:11, 15)
2. Only the unsaved are judged at the last judgment as there is no judgment for Christians. (Romans 8:1)
3. The last judgment occurs at the end of the Millennium. (Revelation 20:7-15)
4. The unsaved are judged according to their works from the Books of Works (Revelation 20:12)
5. The judgment is to show that the Human works of man cannot satisfy the justice of God. God is totally fair and shows that he is only satisfied by "The Good Work". The death of Christ on the Cross.
6. Having shown the unsaved they have failed to satisfy the holiness of God, the condemned are cast into the Lake of Fire. (Revelation 20:15)

3. HOW BEAUTIFUL IS IT?

This verse says, "prepared as a bride adorned for her husband."

- Verse 11 gives more detail.

Rev 21:11. **Having the Glory of God, her light was like a most precious stone, like a jasper stone, clear as crystal.**

There are various kinds of jasper - red, yellow, brown, brownish yellow, etc. The stone is essentially a quartz, and the word "crystal" is used to show that it was superbly clear and bright, dazzling.

The crystal clear jasper also shows the purity of God and His Holiness that shines out of the city.

- We use these words today to describe pure water as crystal clear.

The Glory of God referred to here is described more fully in verse 23:

And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

The light is so pure, so bright and so dazzling that the closest way the Apostle John could describe it was to use the image of a jasper stone, which shows the majesty and Glory of God. This light is also the Shekinah glory.

Verse 23 explains that the New Jerusalem glows radiantly with God's Shekinah Glory, and the Lamb, Jesus Christ is the lamp.

ILLUSTRATION: Think of the headlights of a car. The globe is the God the Father (the source of light), the internal reflector represents the Lord Jesus Christ (the reflector of God's light to man) and the headlight lens represents the Holy Spirit (the distributor of light). All three components combine to focus and distribute the light so you can see.

When you face the lights you are blinded by the combined workings of globe, reflector and lens.

Without a globe, the headlight is useless and without lens and reflector the globe is useless!

- Verses 18-21 describe the beauty of the city's construction.

Rev 21:18: **And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.**

- Pure gold in scripture represents the Righteousness of God.

Verses 19 and 20 list 12 stones adorning the construction of the wall's foundations:

The foundation was adorned (v19) "kosmeo" a word from which we derive "cosmetics" with twelve precious stones.

What are these stones like?

1. The first layer of jasper is generally considered to have included several kinds of delicate translucent colours, blue, green, and rosy tints.
2. The second, sapphire; blue in colour.
3. The third foundation of chalcedony; sky blue with stripes of other colours running through it.
4. The fourth, emerald; a bright green colour.
5. The fifth foundation the sardonyx has a red and white tone to it,
6. The sixth, a sardius stone is found in red and honey colours (cf. Rev. 4~3). The sardius was found near the city of Sardis in Lydia. (Western Turkey.)
7. The seventh, chrysolite, a transparent golden colour.
8. The eighth foundation, beryl is sea-green in colour.
9. The ninth topaz is a transparent stone of yellow-green colour.
10. The tenth chrysoprasus, is generally described as green.
11. The eleventh foundation, the jacinth is a violet colour.
12. The last stone, the amethyst is purple.

- These stones were used to make the breastplate of the High Priest.
- Each stone has its own beauty and glory, as does every believer in Jesus Christ.
- Every stone reflects God's grace, glory, and righteousness, BUT in a different way.

On top of this beautiful foundation stands the walls of jasper and the city of gold. Man in his limited scientific knowledge has only been able to purify gold to a degree of opaqueness.

But here, the infinite God of all science will present a city of transparent gold. How can gold be transparent? The easiest way to picture this is to take a gold coloured balloon and keep blowing it up. As the balloon inflates the gold colour becomes more and more transparent. Apparently, gold has a similar property.

MEANING: In the divine righteousness of God, the believer is promised complete justification and complete glorification (cf. Romans 8:29-30).

This spectacular display reflects the beauty and glory of God.

- The New Jerusalem will be even more beautiful than we can possibly imagine!

DOCTRINE

STONES: JASPER AND SARDIUS

1. The appearance of God on His throne is like a jasper stone and a sardius (Revelation 4:3)
2. These two stones were first and last in the breastplate of the High Priest (Exodus 28:17-20). A picture of Christ, the Alpha and Omega, our High Priest. Because Jesus is our High Priest, we are welcome to "boldly approach the throne" in heaven (Psalm 110:4; Hebrews 4:14-16).
3. The twelve stones in the breastplate were engraved with the names of the sons of Jacob.
4. The sardius (ruby) had the name "Reuben" meaning "behold a Son." This speaks of the First Advent (incarnation) of Jesus. The ruby is blood red, picturing the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross.
5. The jasper had the name of "Benjamin" meaning "Son of My right hand". This speaks of the Second Advent, in glory (Psalm 110:1; Hebrews 1:13). The jasper is crystal, picturing the glory of God (Revelation 21:11).

PRIESTS: PRIESTLY GARMENTS

1. General Scripture:- (Exodus 28)
2. The priestly garments of the High Priest of Israel consisted of seven items.
 - a) The linen garments
 - b) The robe of the Ephod
 - c) The Ephod
 - d) The Urim and Thummim
 - e) The Girdle
 - f) The Crown
 - g) The Breastplate
3. The priestly garments were designed by God and every detail points to the person and work of Christ. In Exodus 28 the garments are called Holy (v2) fine linen (v5) pure gold (v4) precious stones (v17-20) anointed with costly ointment (v41) made by the wise hearted (v3) . This speaks that the garments are made of the very best materials by the finest craftsmen.
4. The Linen Garments (Exodus 28:39-43)

All the priests wore fine twined linen clothes. The fine twined linen shows the absolute perfection of Christ. The garments of the High Priest were built up and covered the white linen clothes.

Principle: All works in the Christian life are based on the work of Christ on the Cross. We stand justified by his righteousness alone.

The Material-. Fine twined linen was an art which died with the Egyptians. The only linen of this type in existence today covers mummies in museums. The fine twined linen was finer than the finest muslin.

Principle: Only the finest material can speak of his holiness and righteousness. The fabric was embroidered with colour. (v39).

Two words are used for embroidery in the bible. One to add colour to a basic garment the other to weave into the base garment a design as an integral part of the garment. The latter is used in this verse. From afar the coat looked like a white garment. Close up however the garment appeared beautifully coloured and exquisite.

Principle: From afar Jesus may appear as a great teacher or prophet. Close up however he is revealed in his full beauty as the Son of God.

The Coat: The word for coat is used in only one other location in the bible - in Genesis 3, where Adam and Eve were covered by a coat of skin (singular) - one death sufficed for Adam and Eve.

Analogy: The death of Christ availed for all mankind.

The High Priest on the Day of Atonement: On that day the High Priest wore a linen coat, hat and trousers when he offered his sacrifice in the Holy of Holies.

Analogy: Christ in his human body (the linen coat) offered once and for all the sacrifice of his body for the sins of the world. Having been judged satisfactory by God he put on his High Priest's garments- the resurrection body.

5. Robe of the Ephod. (Exodus 28:31-35)

The robe of the Ephod was of blue with golden bells and pomegranates around the hem. The robe, unlike the coat, signifies an office. The placing on of the robe was appointment or commissioning to a high calling.

Analogies: Our High Priest was commissioned to be a High Priest for us. Christ means commissioned one. The robe is almost always associated with royalty in the bible. Christ is a royal priest after the order of Melchizedek. (Psalm 110:4). We also are of the royal priesthood because of our union with Christ.

The holiness of Christ (the linen coat) is covered by the blue robe of the Ephod (the deity of Christ). This has its counterpart in the Tabernacle where the broken tablets of stone in the Ark of the Covenant was covered by the solid gold (deity) of the mercy seat.

The robe of the Ephod was woven in one piece. It had neither beginning nor end.

Analogy: The deity of Christ is eternal, it has no beginning nor end. (Revelation 1:8). All the grace covenants are eternal in nature.

The binding around the neck was as strong as chain mail thus making the robe untearable.

Analogy: Our salvation is secure through the power of God.

Fruit Symbols: Pomegranate - peace. Grape - joy. Apple - love.

These three fruits are often found together in the Old Testament. The New Testament equivalent is (Galatians 5:22). Love, Joy, Peace as the first three characteristics of the fruit of the spirit.

The robe with the pomegranates show the King of peace - Melchizedek was the King of Salem (peace).

Principle: The Melchizedek priesthood is shown within the Aaronic priesthood. The bells represent intercessing prayer. They continuously rang as he moved about in the Holy Place - Christ is constantly interceding for us.

6. The Ephod (Exodus 28:6-14)

The Ephod was made of blue, purple, scarlet and white linen. The colours were interlaced by gold representing the deity of Christ binding together the various facets of the person of Christ.

Blue - Godward - Gospel of John. Purple - Kingly - Gospel of Matthew. Scarlet - Saviour - Gospel of Mark. White - man - Gospel of Luke. (see the Four Gospels)

In the book of Exodus these colours are repeated 24 times.

7. The Urim and Thummim (Exodus 28:30)

a) Urim - lights

b) Thummim - perfection

It appears these were placed in a pouch in the breastplate. It is not known what they were but it is thought that they could have been the white and black stones used in voting either yes (white) or no (black) in the ancient world. (Revelation 2:17)

God's will would therefore have been given by a yes or no answer to questions asked. A check in the Old Testament of the use of Urim and Thummim reveals that it was always positive or negative, never conversational. Our Urim and Thummim today is the Word of God as a completed canon which represents the total revelation of God to man necessary to successfully live the Christian life. (1 Corinthians 2:16)

8. The Girdle (Exodus 28:8)

This was a strip of fine twined linen worked in blue, purple and scarlet. It was around the waist of the High Priest tied tightly so that the garments became an inseparable part of the priest.

The girdle was used in three different ways:-

Working - The Lord washing the disciples feet.

Walking - Exodus generation. (Exodus 12:11)

War - The Girdle of truth. (Ephesians 6:14)

In 1 Peter 1:13 we are commanded to gird up our mind.

9. The Crown. (Exodus 28:36-38)

This was a plate of pure gold inscribed 'Holiness to the Lord' . It was tied to the mitre by a blue ribbon and was positioned on his forehead. This is immediately in front of the thinking part of the brain and over the soul of the High Priest of Israel. (Joshua 1:8)

10. The Breastplate (Exodus 28:15-29)

The Breastplate was made of blue, purple and scarlet on white and had twelve precious stones set in it. Each represented one of the twelve tribes with the exception of Levi.

It was 20 cm. square, doubled forming a pocket for Urim and Thummim. It was secured from above by chains of gold to the shoulder stones and at the base by ribbons of blue to the Ephod.

The Stones and Tribes were in order

Sardis - Judah; Topaz - Issachar; Carbuncle - Zebulun; Emerald - Reuben; Sapphire - Simeon; Diamond - Gad; Ligure - Ephraim; Agate - Manasseh; Amethyste - Benjamin; Beryl - Dan; Onyx - Asher; Jasper - Naphtali.

On the Two Shoulder Stones - two onyx stones (Exodus 28:9, 10) the names of the tribes were written again with Ephraim and Manasseh being replaced by Joseph and Levi.

The Shoulder Stone names were according to their birth (Exodus 28:10) - representing Salvation - the two stones are the same - Salvation is the same for everybody.

The Breastplate Stone names were according to their precedence in the tribes. (Numbers 10:14-27) all stones are different - representing a variety of spiritual gifts - all have different talents for serving the Lord.

Principle: All the stones in the breastplate were precious. We are all precious in his sight and important in God's service. We are all necessary as members of the body of Christ. We have diversity without inferiority.

4. WHAT OTHER FEATURES DOES IT HAVE?

4.1 WALL and FOUNDATIONS.

21:12. Also she had a great and high wall with twelve gates, and twelve angels at the gates, and names written on them, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

21:13 On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates.

21:14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

KEY WORDS

Had	Echo	To have and to hold [Present Active Participle]
Wall	Teichos	An Outer Wall
Great	Megas	Great
High	Hupselos	High
Twelve	Dodeka	Two And Ten
Gates	Pulon	Gate, Gateway
Angels	Aggelos	Angel, Messenger
Names	Onoma	Name
Written	Epigrapho	Write [Perfect Passive Participle]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Tribes	Phule	Tribe
Children	Huios	Son
Israel	Israel	Ruling With God
East	Anatole	East, Uprising Of The Sun
Three	Treis	Three
North	Borrhas	North, North Wind
South	Notos	South, South Wind
West	Dusme	West, Sinking Of The Sun
Foundations	Themelios	Foundation, Anything Laid
In	En	In
Apostles	Apostolos	One Sent Forth
Lamb	Arnion	Lamb

ANALYSIS AND BACKGROUND.

In the Bible 12 is the number for perfect government.

- A wall is used to separate and protect. In the Millennium, this may show that God's people are separated and protected from evil. Separation from evil is a blessing, and a divine principle that is taught by scripture. Obviously no wall is needed for protection in heaven.
- These are walls of FAITH. We get these by faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. We cannot earn them.
- The wall of faith sets us apart from the rest of mankind secure in God's grace.

The wall is a memorial to Israel (Jews and Gentiles) as the Covenant-people by whom Christ came in terms of His human lineage. To them were given the four unconditional covenants of the Old Testament the Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, and New Covenant. (Romans 9:1-5)

These covenants all depend upon the Seed of Abraham in whom "all families of the earth shall be blessed" Genesis 12:3; Galatians 3:16.

These covenants, and faith in the coming seed, once stood as a "wall of partition" between Jews and Gentiles Ephesians 2:11-22.

This is in contrast with the tabernacle where the entrance was in the east and those worshipping moved towards the west.

The wise men came from the east to the west. Adam and his family were sent out to the east of Eden and came back to present their sacrifices by coming west.

The elders of Israel were condemned by the Lord for worshipping the rising sun with their backs to the Temple.

The Foundation - the wall, picturing faith, must have a solid foundation.

The foundation stones bear the names of the twelve Apostles of Christ.

This is the same truth taught in Ephesians. 2:20 which says: "Having been built on the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone ."

The subject of that passage is the household of faith, made up of all who believe in Jesus Christ.

At the INTERSECTION of that wall of Israel and the Church is the Cornerstone, Jesus Christ, 1 Peter. 2:6-10.

- There are twelve gates with the names of the tribes of Israel. In scripture "gates" represent places of judgement.

The names of the 12 tribes refer to all people who are saved by the blood of Christ. Only the saved will be admitted into the city. Ezekiel 48:31.

- The fact that the New Jerusalem will have gates implies that its citizens will have freedom to go in and out.

Therefore we have a picture of righteousness ruling and God's family can happily enter and leave the city in accordance with God's holy character.

Angels are divine messengers. We are not told the purpose of the angels. They may serve different purposes in the Millennium and the Eternal State.

MEANING: The whole world will be blessed by a universal, divine government.

V14. Now the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

The twelve apostles of the Lamb are the eleven plus Paul.

- Therefore, from these verses it can be concluded that both Israel (the apostles were all Jews) and the church inhabit New Jerusalem.
- Even in eternity Israel and the church are distinguished though both are included in God's redeemed people.

The wall of faith must have a solid foundation.

The foundation stones bear the names of the 12 Apostles of Christ.

This same truth is taught in Ephesians 2:20, which says: **"Having been built on the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone."**

The prophets and apostles refer to the scriptures.

- Psalm 118:22 shows that the stone the builders rejected has now become the cornerstone.
- Isaiah 28:16 shows that the cornerstone was the future Messiah and Saviour, on whom our faith now rests.

The Lord promised the apostles that when the earth is regenerated they would sit on 12 thrones, judging the 12 tribes of Israel. See Matthew 19:28 and Luke 22:30.

To be a judge denotes rank, authority and power. The ancient judges of Israel were people of courage, patriotism, honor, and distinction. The word JUDGE denotes the EARNED honor that goes with the office.

The Apostles will be honored by Him, because in their earthly lives they ignored the status and attractions of the world, and instead endured persecution and suffering to faithfully and obediently serve Him and lay the foundations of His church.

MEANING: The foundations of the great and Holy City are a fitting memorial and honour to the apostles. The New Jerusalem is the eternal result of their earthly suffering, service, obedience and love to the chief cornerstone, Jesus Christ.

APPLICATION

This should be our attitude to serving the Lord with the time and gifts He has given us. We should be excited and motivated by our eternal rewards that will more than compensate for our service to the Lord on earth.

The New Jerusalem will have a great and high wall suggesting the security of the bride. In the wall are twelve gates with an angel at each one and the names of the twelve tribes of Israel inscribed on them.

John does not reveal the name of each gate in contrast to the millennial scene in which Ezekiel gives the names of tribes of Israel as inscribed on the gates of the city at that time (cf. Ezekiel 48:31-35).

The fact that the New Jerusalem will have gates implies that its citizens will have freedom to go in and out.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: STONE – CHRIST AS A STONE

1. The word for stone, takes us to the Messianic prophecies of the stone. Matthew 21:42, Mark 12:10,11, Luke 20:17, Acts 4:11, Romans 9:32, 33, 10:11,13.

2. Peter uses the word 'stone' in four ways through 1 Peter chapter 2 to draw attention to the nature of the Lord's work for mankind and to demonstrate the finality of man's rejection of his work.

[a] The Lord is the "living stone" (verse 4); the one who gives life from death. Like the rock in the desert living waters come from him, but he is a hewn stone, not just a rock. The hewn stone (lithos) is a stone that has been under the mason's hammer and chisel, and the Lord placed himself under disciple and obedience to win our salvation.

[b] He becomes, through his obedience to the Father's plan, the "precious cornerstone" (vs 6 -8); the key foundation of the new building, the church. Only those who are part of this Holy Spirit constructed structure are saved and secure for all eternity.

[c] By most men he becomes the "rejected stone" (vs 4-7). They have observed him and they reject him as "unfit", but God makes him the cornerstone of the future direction of history.

[d] He is to those who reject him the "stone of stumbling" (vs 8). They will stumble and fall into eternity without hope because of their arrogant rejection of God's provided Saviour.

LAMB

The lamb is a central feature of typology in the Bible as a symbol of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Here we see the developing topic of the Lamb from the sacrifice by Abel to the Lord of Glory

It shows the importance of a word study when examining the Scriptures

1. Genesis 4:3-5a

- a) Abel brought a lamb from his flock.
- b) Propitiation emphasised - covering.
- c) The lamb was an offering for sin.

2. Genesis 22:7-14

- a) Abraham was provided with a ram.
- b) Substitution emphasised.
- c) The lamb was an offering for one person.

3. Exodus 12:3-7

- a) The lamb had to be slain.
- b) Protection emphasised.
- c) The lamb was an offering for one family.

4. Leviticus 1:10-13, 16:15

- a) The lamb without spot or blemish.
- b) Character of the lamb emphasised.
- c) The lamb was an offering for the nation Israel.

5. Isaiah 53:4-8

- a) Shows that the lamb to be provided is a person.
- b) Expiation emphasised.
- c) The lamb was an offering for the elect.

6. John 1:29

- a) Shows that the lamb was Jesus.
- b) Complete removal of sin emphasised.
- c) The lamb was an offering for the whole world.

7. Acts 8:30-37

- a) Shows that Jesus is the Christ the promised Messiah.
- b) Individual salvation emphasised.
- c) The lamb was an offering for whosoever.

8. 1 Peter 1:18-21

- a) Shows the resurrection of the lamb.
- b) Redemption emphasised.
- c) The lamb was an offering for all generations.

9. Revelation 5:6-10

- a) Shows the glorification of the lamb.
- b) Government of the lamb emphasised.
- c) The lamb of the whole universe.

10. Revelation 22:1-5

- a) Shows the everlasting kingship of the lamb.
- b) Eternal glory of the lamb emphasised.
- c) The lamb for all eternity.

The developing topic of the lamb shows how Jesus Christ is the central figure in all the Scriptures and how the inspired writers of the Bible gradually developed the revelation of his character, work and glorification from a lamb to the King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

CHURCH: APOSTLESHIP

1. The word "Apostle" is used in three senses in the new Testament:

- a. Apostles to Israel (12 in number) Matthew 10.
- b. Apostles to the Church (Acts 1:21-26) (12).
- c. Those sent out with or by the twelve Apostles.

At least seven mentioned in the New Testament letters.

2. The word "Apostolos" is instructive in itself, It was the word used in Attic Greek to describe the Admiral of the Athenian Navy chosen to lead the fleet into battle by the other Admirals and "sent out" to take command and prosecute the War. It therefore has primary reference to someone who holds supreme authority in his assigned area of work.
3. The function of the twelve Apostles (Revelation 21:14, 1Corinthians 12:28, Ephesians 4:11 would indicate that this is the full number who hold the office in the primary sense), was the establishment, government and leading of the church during the early stages and the writing of the Canon of Scripture or the overseeing of such writing.
4. The Apostles to Israel carried on into the church age to be re-appointed Apostles for the Church (minus Judas) Acts 1:1:1-8. This emphasises the important Biblical principle of the Olive Tree, Romans 11:13 - 32, which shows us that God has a united plan, with Israel and the church separate yet united within it.
5. The voting of Matthias as Judas' replacement was 'logical' (Acts 1:15-26), for there was a need within Jewish circles, for there to be twelve formal witnesses for miraculous events, but not spiritual, as the Holy Spirit had not yet come and guidance was not sought. Casting lots and praying over the fall of sticks, straws or cards is not God's way of appointing anyone.
6. This college believes Paul may have been the replacement for Judas. (Remember that Paul was, as an unbeliever, every bit as evil as Judas, and thus was a trophy of Grace whom God could use mightily). 1 Corinthians 15:7-10.
7. Apostles were those who had witnessed the Lord's earthly ministry and had been eye witnesses to his resurrection. Acts 1:21,22. They were men personally chosen by the Lord Jesus Christ. Acts 9:15, 26:16,17, Ephesians 4:8 cf. 4:11, 1Corinthians 12:11, 1Corinthians 9:1, 15:8,9, Galatians 1:1.
8. Identification of Apostles was easy as their gift was associated with sign gifts that drew people's attention to their office. e.g. gift of healing. Acts 3:1-11, 19:11,12...etc. It does appear however that once their office was universally recognised the "sign gifts" were discontinued. e.g. Philippians 2:27, 2 Timothy 4:20. God still healed in response to prayer and sovereignty but Paul's healing touch (Acts 28:8) was gone.
9. Certain men who were closely associated with the Twelve Apostles were "sent out" on special missions and were referred to in a secondary sense (sent out with delegated authority) as Apostles. e.g. Barnabas Acts 14:14, Galatians 4:2. John Mark, James, Jude, Apollos 1 Corinthians 4:6,9. Silas and Timothy 1Thessalonians 1:1,2:6.

COVENANTS

1. A covenant is a contract or agreement between God and man.
2. Some covenants are unconditional - God will fulfil them, irrespective of man's obedience. Other covenants are conditional upon man's obedience.
3. Christ is central to all of the covenants in Scripture:
 - a) EDENIC - Christ is the second Adam (1 Corinthians 15:45-47).
 - b) ADAMIC - Christ is the seed of the woman (Genesis 3:15).
 - c) NOAHIC - Christ is the greatest son of Shem (Luke 3:36; Genesis 9:23-27).
 - d) ABRAHAMIC - The seed to whom the promises were made (Genesis 22:18).
 - e) MOSAIC - He fulfilled this covenant (Matthew 5:17).
 - f) PALESTINIAN - He lived as a Jew in the land and will inherit the land
 - g) DAVIDIC - Christ is the King of the Jews and will rule forever (Luke 1:31-33; John 19:19-22).
 - h) NEW - Christ's sacrifice is its foundation and focus in the Millennium (1 Corinthians 11:25).

COVENANT: ABRAHAMIC COVENANT

1. Abrahamic Covenant (Genesis 12:1-3) founds the nation of Israel
2. It is confirmed with Abraham with emphasis on the land (Genesis 13:14-18), the spiritual seed (Genesis 15:1-6) and its everlasting quality (Genesis 17:6-8).
3. It is an unconditional covenant - God will fulfil it. (God caused Abraham to fall asleep as He ratified the covenant alone Genesis 15:12-18)

4. The seven-fold covenant (Genesis 12:1-3) is fulfilled as follows:-

a) PROMISE "And I will make of thee a great nation.

FULFILLMENT Jews (Genesis. 13:16; John 8:37), Arabs (Genesis. 17:20), In Christ (Romans 4:16-17, 9:7-8; Galatians 3:7,29).

b) PROMISE "I will bless thee".

FULFILLMENT To Abraham (Genesis 13:14-17, 15:18-21. 24:35), To believers in Christ (Genesis 15:6; John 8:56)

c) PROMISE "And make thy name great.

FULFILLMENT Abraham is renowned, not only in Christianity but also in Judaism and with the Moslems.

d) PROMISE "And thou shalt be a blessing.

FULFILLMENT With the work of fulfilment of Abraham's seed, Jesus Christ, he was a blessing. (Galatians 3:13,14).

e) PROMISE "And I will bless them that bless thee.

FULFILLMENT This is seen in the rise of many nations eg Britain in the 19th century, the rise of the USA.

f) PROMISE "And curse him that curseth thee.

FULFILLMENT The decline of nations such as the Spanish Empire after the Armada, the fall of Nazi Germany, the fall of the Czars of Russia, the decline of Egypt at the Exodus. Scriptural examples:(Deuteronomy 30:7; Isaiah 14:1-2; Joel 3:1-8; Micah 5:7-9; Haggai 2:22; Zechariah 14. 1-3; Matthew 25:40-46).

g) PROMISE "In thee shall all the families of the earth be blessed.

FULFILLMENT The whole world can be blessed through Jesus, the son of Abraham. (John 8:56-58; Galatians 3:16).

5. It is clear that the we should support the Jew as it is a sure means of enjoying divine blessing.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: FAITH

1. The Christian life can be divided into three sections or stages.

a) Stage 1 - Salvation.

b) Stage 2 - The Christian Walk

c) Stage 3 - The Christian in Heaven.

2. Man has three means of obtaining knowledge:

a) Faith - to believe or trust that something is true

b) Reasoning - using human logic to deduce that something is true

c) Experimentation - to test and prove something to satisfy yourself that it is true

3. The only acceptable method of gaining grace is by faith, since this means depending upon God without our human merit.

a) Stage 1 - Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved - salvation (Acts 16:31).

b) Stage 2 - Trusting in the promises and principles of the Word of God - the Christian walk.

c) Stage 3 - Trusting in God's provision - Heaven.

4. To illustrate belief and unbelief we follow the Jews from the plagues in Egypt to crossing the Jordan:

Incident	God's Promise	Scripture	Response	Result
Last plague	Passover Lamb	Exodus 12:21-30	Trust	Jews spared last plague.
Egyptian Army	Red Sea Crossing	Exodus 14:1-31	Trust	Moses leads Jews over Red Sea.
No Water	Water	Exodus 17:1-7	Trust	By striking rock (Christ) water obtained.
Gold Calf	God's Doctrine	Exodus 32:15-28	Distrust	Sons of Levi (Priests) slaughtered for leading
Quails	Manna	Num 11:10-33	Distrust	Many deaths due to quails
Giants	Enter Canaan	Num 13:1-14:38	Distrust	Death of fearful spies. Wandering in desert
No water	Water	Num 20:2-13	Distrust	Moses strikes rock in disobedience. Will not enter Promised Land.

Wanderings	Cross Jordan	Joshua 3:1-17	Trust	Israel crosses Jordan on dry ground
------------	--------------	---------------	-------	-------------------------------------

5. Salvation faith is the complete trust in the Lord Jesus Christ, who died for your sins and rose from the dead to give you eternal life. (Acts 16:31, Romans 4:20-25)
6. Anything added to becomes works, and therefore nullifies faith (Romans 4:4)
7. Faith is shown outwardly by confession with the mouth. (Romans 10:9-10)
8. Since faith does not depend on our own abilities, anybody can believe. Even little children (Matthew 18:2-4)
9. Assurance is by faith (Hebrews 10:22)
10. Faith is trust which does not ask to know all about God but believe all that God has said.
11. Salvation faith receives Christ as Saviour and Lord. (John 1:12, 3:16, 3:36)
12. Faith of salvation is the complete trust in the Lord Jesus Christ as having been delivered from our transgressions and raised again for our justification. (Romans 4:20-25)
13. By Faith God gives the soul assurance of the reality of things never yet seen by the natural man. (Hebrews 11:1-3)
14. The triumphs of faith in daily life are illustrated for the believer in Hebrews 11:1-39. Abel, Noah, Moses etc.
15. Faith comes from hearing and hearing from the Word of God. (Romans 10:17)
16. Faith is the only non meritorious means of understanding things the other being rationalism and empiricism.
17. To become like a little child is an analogy to faith as a young child only has faith. (Matthew 18:2-4)

4.2 TWELVE PEARL GATES.

Revelation 21:21 **The twelve gates were twelve pearls: each individual gate was of one pearl. And the street of the city was pure gold, like transparent glass.**

KEY WORDS

Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Gates	Pulon	Gates
Were	-	Implied but not found in the original
Pearls	Margarites	A Pearl
Every Several	Ana Eis Ekastos	Each One Separately
Street	Plateia	A Broad Wide Open Street
City	Polis	City
Pure	Katharos	Clean, Pure, Clear
Gold	Chrusion	Gold
Transparent	Diaphanes	Transparent
Glass	Hualos	Glass

ANALYSIS AND BACKGROUND

The pearl was valued above all stones in the ancient world. Jesus spoke of the "pearl of great price" in Matthew 13:46.

This represents the incomparable value of entering the Kingdom of God, so much so that if you were to see the gates now, you would immediately and gladly sell all you own to go through them.

Thus the gates of "access" through the "wall" of faith fit the figure of a single pearl.

- These pearly gates were made by the suffering and death of the Lord Jesus Christ on the cross.
- It is Jesus' work of Salvation on the cross that makes access into our eternal home possible. If not for the cross, we would be in the poverty stricken shared accommodation of Hell.

STREET: "Plateia" a broad wide street is in contrast to "Rhune" which is a narrow street or alley

The street, singular, not "streets" was of pure transparent gold.

Gold represents the righteousness of God (Psalm 19:10), and a street is the place of travel, so we have the saints walking in the perfect righteousness of God.

APPLICATION

Built into the walls are the twelve gates that John describes as each being made of one huge pearl.

When one reflects as to the creation of a pearl in the depths of the sea - the agitation of a single grain of sand, to perfect the shape; lustre and size – it all pales into insignificance when compared with the sufferings of our Lord to produce gates such as these.

DOCTRINES

PEARL

1. Pearl is of great value - believer in union with Christ is the great value to God.
2. A Pearl is a complete unit - we as believers are completed by union with Christ.
3. The pearl is taken from the sea. Nations are called the sea. Believers come from every nation.
4. The pearl is formed through suffering - the Church is formed through the suffering of Christ on the cross.
5. The pearl that was purchased was bought by a person who sold all that he had - the price is the work of Jesus Christ on the cross.
6. The pearl is displayed - believers are still on this earth representing the Lord Jesus Christ. (2 Corinthians 3:3)

CHRIST:- HUMILIATION AND EXALTATION – THE ROAD TO GLORY

1. The Lords Jesus Christ in Exaltation - Hebrews 8:1 "Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens;"

2. The Road to Glory - Philippians 2:5-11

3 "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus" [v 5]

[a] "let this mind be in you - (Present. Active. Imperative) have this attitude. To think objectively, noble thinking of divine viewpoint based on thinking the mind of Christ. 1 Corinthians 2:16 compared to 2 Corinthians 10:4-5

[b] "in yourselves" - among believers Vs. 4 "look" - (Present. Active. Participle] consider, focus Basis of 4 Laws of the Christian Way of Life.

4. "Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God" [v 6]:

[a] "form of God" - Inner Character. Divine Essence- in his pre-incarnate state.

[b] "being" - (Present. Active. Participle.) Eternal existence. Revelation 1:8 John 1:1 Colossians 2:16

[c]"robbery" - "to be grasped" - (Present. Active. Infinitive.)

[i] Used for act of robbery

[ii] Used of a thing robbed

[iii] A prize or thing to be grasped; be won but something to clutch hold of strongly,

5. "But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men" [v 7]

[a] His incarnation: not something to hold. No reputation - "emptied" - (Aorist. Active. Indicative.) To lay aside privileges, deprive oneself of normal function:

[i] Not loss of deity

[ii] Not loss of divine attributes

[iii] Rather, a choosing not to exercise His essence so as to become "like us:" Hebrews 2:14,17

[b] being the form" - (Aorist. Active. Participle.) human essence - body, soul, spirit no Old Sin Nature

[c] "being made" (Aorist. Middle. Participle.) Having become. Precedes "humbled"

[d] "likeness of men" - of same condition, nature and ability.

6. "And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross." [v 8]

[a] His Humiliation: - "being found" - (Aorist. Passive. Participle) being recognised, discovered.

[b] "in appearance" - In contrast to all that He was, what He appeared outwardly to others.

[c] "He humbled Himself" - (Aorist Active Indicative.) Mental attitude of grace from birth to death. True humility Romans 12:3

[d] "becoming obedient" - (Aorist. Middle Participle.) to hear & obey.

[e] "to the point of death" - Spiritual death. Christ learned obedience through suffering (Hebrews 5:8) maximum self-discipline.

[f] His Humiliation: - "death on a cross" - Most disgraceful form of death. Reserved for hardened criminals and runaway slaves.

7. "Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name":[v 9]

[a] His Exaltation: - "therefore" - because of His humiliation "highly exalted" - (Aorist . Active. Indicative.) To raise above and beyond.

[b] Christ shared God's glory in Eternity Past, but this is the exaltation of His humanity. Compare Ephesians 1:20-23

[c] "bestowed" - (Aorist. Middle. Indicative.) Freely bestowed, as Christ gave Himself freely.

[d] "name" - The rank, office, dignity. The name, Hebrews 1:4-8

8. "That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth"; [v 10]

Celebrityship Recognised/Universal Acknowledgment: "at the name" - In sphere of His exalted position

[i] Those in heaven - angelic

[ii] On earth - human

[iii] Under earth - dead unbelievers and imprisoned demons.

9. "And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father" [v 11].

[a] "every tongue confess" - (Aorist. Middle. Subjunctive.) Openly acknowledge volitionally - self condemned

[b] "Jesus Christ is Lord" - Deity

[c] "to glory of God"

APPLICATION

1. True humility is the way to greatness. Luke 22:24-27 grace-oriented thinking. Romans 12:3

2. The way to lead with authority is to follow with submission. Luke 7:1-10

3. True understanding of authority demands that one serve - not be served. 1 Corinthians 9:1-18 The Law of Supreme Sacrifice and the Christian Medal of Honour.

4. Application to the Pastor. 1-Peter 5:1- 4

NUMEROLOGY

1. Traditionally, and in the Bible, letters of the numeric values have been assigned to letters of the alphabet, and various numbers, in turn, have specific symbolic meanings.

2. Very intricate numeric patterns can be seen in the Scriptures in the original languages.

3. Numbers assigned to letters of the alphabet.

Number	Hebrew	Greek
1.	ALEPH	ALPHA
2.	BETH	BETA
3.	GIMEL	GAMMA
4.	DALETH	DELTA
5.	HE	EPSILON
6.	VAU	DIGAMMA
7.	ZAIN	ZETA
8.	CHETH	ETA
9.	TETH	THETA
10.	JOD	IOTA
20.	CAPH	KAPPA
30.	LAMED	LAMBDA
40.	MEM	MU
50.	NUN	NU

60.	SAMECH	XI
70.	AYIN	OMICRON
80.	PE	PI
90.	TZADDI	KOPPA
100.	KOPH	RHO
200.	RESH	SIGMA
300.	SCHIN	TAU
400.	TAU	UPSILON
500.	PHI	
600.	CHI	
700.	PSI	
800.	OMEGA	
900.	SAMPI	

4. Symbols assigned to various numbers.

1. Unity or unit.
2. Separation or witness.
3. Godhead or Perfection.
4. Creative work or world.
5. Grace.
6. Man (under sin).
7. God's seal - the perfect number.
8. Resurrection or new beginning.
9. Finality.
10. Ordinal perfection.
11. Disorganisation.
12. Perfect Government.
13. Sin or rebellion.
37. The word.
40. Probation or testing.

5. Examples of numbers in Scripture:

- a) The number of the antichrist (666) in Revelation 13:18 is made up of 3 (perfection) 6's (man/sin). The antichrist, therefore, is seen as the ultimate sinful man.
- b) The number forty signifies testing or judgment.
- i) It rained forty days and nights in the Flood of Noah
 - ii) The Jews wandered for forty years in the wilderness.
 - iii) Jesus was tempted in the desert for forty days.
 - iv) Many of the kings of Israel reigned for forty years.
- c) The number twelve signifies government. It is found as a multiple in all that has to do with rule.
- i) There were twelve judges in Israel
 - ii) There were twelve sons of Israel. Whilst there were actually thirteen tribes (Ephraim and Manasseh came from Joseph), only twelve are mentioned in any lists.
 - iii) There were twelve people anointed in the Old Testament, five priests and seven kings. It is interesting that Saul was the sixth anointed, six being the number of man, Saul being man's choice. David was the seventh, seven being God's number, David being God's choice.
 - iv) There were twelve disciples and twelve apostles. The twelve apostles will sit on twelve thrones
 - v) There are twelve gates, twelve pearls and twelve foundations into the New Jerusalem

4.3 IT HAS NO TEMPLE.

V22. **And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it.**

- John was NATURALLY looking for a temple, this is what he would be used to and expecting. There is no temple because the whole city is the Holy of Holies that God dwells in.

APPLICATION

Here we see the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. We as believers will dwell with God intimately forever.

That God Himself is the light of the city is in keeping with many passages of Scripture (cf, John 1:7-9; 3:19; 8:12; 12:35).

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: MINISTRY AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD

As Christians we never have to face the enemy alone as the Lord Jesus Christ is at the right hand of the Father in the place of commendation. As such:

1. Jesus Christ as our Advocate defends us -1 John 2:1, Romans 8:1, 32-34
2. Jesus Christ as our Intercessor prays for us - Romans 8:34, John 17, Ephesians 1:3, 20
3. Jesus Christ as our Great Shepherd supplies us. - Psalm 23:1, Philippians 4:19, Hebrews 13:20-21
4. Jesus Christ as our Forerunner open the path to God for us. Hebrews 6:20, 10:20, Romans 5:2
5. Jesus Christ as our High Priest sets us apart for service to God Hebrews 5:5-10, 7:17-27, 10:5-18
6. We have a defender who has promised He will never leave us nor forsake us. Hebrews 13:5
7. He who keeps us never sleeps. Psalm 121
8. God's great power is shown towards us. He is at every moment watching over us for protection and provision.
9. Because of the ascension the Lord has received the promise of the Holy Spirit and poured it forth upon His obedient and believing disciples.
10. He has gone to prepare a place for us. John 14:1-3
11. The power of the glorified Christ is available through the power of the Holy Spirit.
12. Jesus Christ has been exalted above the angels and received a name which is above every name, everything is subject to Him and has become His footstool.

WHAT IS ITS SIZE?

Rev 21:15-17 states: 15 And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. 16 And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. 17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

KEY WORDS

Talked	Laleo	Talk [Present Active Participle]
Had	Echo	To Have And To Hold [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Golden	Chrusaios	Golden, Of Gold
Reed	Kalamos	A Stalk, Reed, Cane
Measure	Metreo	To Measure [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
City	Polis	City
Gates	Pulon	Gate, Gateway
Wall	Teichos	Wall
Lieth	Keimai	Lie, Lay
Foursquare	Tetragonos	Four Cornered
Length	Mekos	Length
Is	Eimi	To be
Large	Tosoutos	As large
Breadth	Platos	Breadth, Width
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Thousand	Chiliades	Thousands
Furlongs	Stadion	One Eighth of a Roman Mile
Height	Hupsos	Height
Equal	Isos	Equal To, The Same As
Hundred	Hekaton	Hundred

Forty	Tessarakonta	Forty
Four	Tessares	Four
Cubits	Pechus	A Cubit, The Forearm
Man	Anthropos	Man
Angel	Aggelos	Angel, Messenger

ANALYSIS AND BACKGROUND

The golden reed is a measuring instrument.

The angel that talked with John now measures the dimensions of the city.

Using a golden reed (ten feet long or 3 metres) the angel finds that the city is square its length and breadth being equal, 12,000 furlongs (verse 16).

A furlong is equal to 582 feet so the total distance would be equal to approximately 1,500 miles. As this is a cube or foursquare shape the amount of space that will be occupied by the city is staggering.

These measurements are roughly 2400km/1500 miles, or nearly the distance from Perth to Adelaide.

(NOTE: There is much scholarly debate concerning the shape of the city, whether it is a cube or a pyramid. One very famous and highly respected theologian, the late Dr McGee believes these measurements describe a cube within a crystal clear sphere. However, whatever the shape is, we can be sure that it is huge enough for all of God's family to live in without being packed in like sardines. What should matter to us right now is that it is an absolutely perfect city!)

Also, 2 Chronicles 3:8 tells us the Holy of Holies in Solomon's Temple was a perfect cube, 20 cubits each way was also a perfect cube thus this is the center of God's eternal Temple which is indwelt by the Church, and we are indwelt by God Himself.

In the ancient world the cube was the symbol of perfection, and its form was also used for the Brazen Altar and the breastplate of the High Priest

Both the altar of burnt offering and the altar of incense were of this form and so was the High Priest's breastplate cf. Exodus 27:1, 28:16, 30:2; 1 Kings. 6:20.

The feature also reappears in Ezekiel's new city and temple (Ezekiel 41:21; 43:16; 45:1; 48:20).

In ancient cities the foursquare form was not unusual.. As is well known, the rectangular tetragon was to Greek thinkers a symbol of perfection.

The cubits used for the wall are 144,000 in number and I wonder if there may not be a link here to the 144,000 evangelists of Revelation 7.

APPLICATION

The measuring rod comes from Ezekiel 40:3, the measurements of the city were to produce awe of God's great promises and thus repentance Ezekiel 40:4, 43:10-11

The cube or city however, must be understood as a place where everyone will dwell throughout eternity, as the saints will have access to and from it,

The implications are however that there is an abundant amount of room for all,

The cube or foursquare shape of the city reminds one of the fourfold dimensions given of the love of God (Ephesians. 3:18).

Twelve is perfect government and is the product of three, the divine number and four the earthly number.

DOCTRINES

TWELVE ANOINTED

1. Twelve is the number of perfect government
2. Twelve people were anointed for government of various kinds with the first five being priests and the last seven being kings

Aaron	Exodus 29:7,9
Nadab	Exodus 29:7,9
Abihu	Exodus 29:7,9
Eleazar	Exodus 29:7,9
Ithamar	Exodus 29:7,9
Saul	1 Samuel 10:1
David	1 Samuel 16:13
Absalom	2 Samuel 19:10
Solomon	1 Kings 1:39
Jehu	2 Kings 9:6
Joash	2 Kings 11:12
Jehoahaz	2 Kings 23:30

3. It can be noted that Saul was the sixth anointed, six being the number of man and Saul being man's choice
4. In contrast David was the seventh, seven being God's number and David being God's choice.

MEASUREMENTS AND WEIGHTS

1. Weights were carried in pouches (Deuteronomy 25:13; Micah 6:11; Proverbs 16:11) to enable a purchaser to check the weight of metals used for exchange (Genesis 23:16).

- a) Talent - the heaviest weight, usually about 30 kg, used to weigh gold (2 Samuel 12:30), silver, iron (1Chronicles 29:7) and bronze (Exodus 38:29).
- b) Mina usually weighed about 500 grams and was used to measure gold (1 Kings 10:17), silver (Ezra 2:69).
- c) Shekel was the most common weight used in the Middle East, varying in weight from 10 to 13 grams.
 - i) Royal shekel (2 Samuel 14:26)
 - ii) Common shekel (1 Samuel 17:5; 2 Kings 7:1; Ezekiel 4:10).
 - iii) Temple shekel (Exodus 30:13; Leviticus 5:15).
- d) Bekah or half shekel (Genesis 24:22).
- e) Gerahs (Exodus 30:13; Ezekiel 45:12) was one twentieth of a shekel.
- f) Pound (John 12:3; 19:39) weighed 330 grams.

2. Linear measurement of objects consisted of:

- a) The reed - approximately 3 metres in length or 6 cubits (Ezekiel 40:5; Revelation 21:15).
- b) Cubit - the distance from the elbow to the fingertip, approximately 1/2 metre (Deuteronomy 3:11 Genesis 7:20).
- c) Span - was half a cubit (1 Samuel 17:4; Exodus 28:16).
- d) Palm - was one sixth of a cubit (1 Kings 7:26).
- e) Finger - was one quarter of a palm.

3. Measurement of distance included:

- a) Bowshot (Genesis 21:16).
- b) Length of a ploughed furrow (1 Samuel 14:14).
- c) A day's journey (Numbers 11:31 ; 1 Kings 19:4).
- d) A journey of three days (Genesis 30:36; Exodus 3:18).
- e) Fathom (Acts 27:28) measured 1.8 metres.
- f) Furlong (Luke 24:13; Revelation 14:20), 165 metres.
- g) Mile (Matthew 5:41), 1480 metres.
- h) Sabbath Day's journey (Acts 1:12), 1,000 metres.

4. Measurements of capacity:

- a) A donkey load (Leviticus 27:16) 220 litres
- b) Firkin (John 2:6) 40 litres
- c) Ephah (Zechariah 5:6-10; Amos 8:5) 22 litres
- d) Bath (1 Kings 7:26; 2 Chronicles 2:10) 22 litres
- e) Bushel (Matthew 5:15; Mark 4:21) 9 litres
- f) Hin (Leviticus 19:36) 4 litres
- g) Omer (Exodus 16:16-33) 2.2 litres
- h) Log (Leviticus 14:10) 2.2 litres

i) Measure (Revelation 6:6) 1 litre

WHAT IS THE ETERNAL PURPOSE OF THE CITY?

Revelation 21:24-27:

24 And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

21:25 And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

21:26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

21:27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

KEY WORDS

Nations	Ethnos	A Nation
Walk	Peripateo	To Walk Around [Future Active Indicative]
Light	Phos	Light, Radiance
Kings	Basileus	King
Earth	Ge	Earth
Bring	Phero	Bring [Present Active Indicative]
Glory	Doxa	Glory
Honour	Time	Honour, Weight
Gates	Pulon	Gates
Shut	Kleio	To Shut [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Day	Hemera	Day
Night	Nux	Night
Be	Eimi	Keep On Being [Future Middle Indicative]
No Wise	Ou Me	Assuredly Not
Enter	Eiserchomai	To Come Or Go Into [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Defileth	Koinoo	To Make Common Or Unclean
Worketh	Poieo	To Do, Make [Present Active Participle]
Abomination	Bdelugma	Abomination
Maketh	-	Not in original
Lie	Pseudos	A Lie, Lying, Falsehood
Written	Grapho	Written [Perfect Passive Participle]
Lamb	Arnion	Lamb
Book	Biblion	A Book, Roll, Scroll
Life	Zoe	Life

ANALYSIS AND BACKGROUND.

Here we have “phos” which is light in this verse compared with “luchnos”, or lamp in verse 23, which is also translated light.

Those of the nations reside, not in the city, but on the renovated earth. These nations will be headed by Israel under the rule of King David, Christ's regent on earth.

The Greek interlinear renders this verse” And shall walk about the nations through the light of it, and the kings of the earth bring the glory of them into it.”

The gates will never shut and there will be perpetual day. Like the gates of ancient cities the Temple gates in Old Jerusalem were closed at night.

The city itself shall be one great body of light and glory.

One could express it in this manner, "one perpetual high noon" that is divest of any cloud or shadow.

Thus, there is no night with its darkness its fears, and its terrors.

The glory of the nations go up to the New Jerusalem

This clearly declares it will not be enjoyed by any who reject Christ. cf. Revelation 13:8, 21:8

John closes the chapter with a solemn reminder that if they had not believed, they too would be excluded from an eternal life of purity and bliss.

The holy city has three functions:

[a] It will be the personal residence of the Lord Jesus Christ. It is of interest that on the basis of land formations Jerusalem is the most efficient city on earth as far as a cumulative minimum distance to the rest of the earth is concerned.

[b] It fulfils the promise to Abraham as it is a city that is provided in grace.

[c] This is the headquarters of the universe for eternity Hebrews 11:9-10

APPLICATION.

- The city will be the place of worship to which the inhabitants of the nations will bring their honour and glory.
- The believer now enters upon an eternal day where he will know no setting sun.
- The statement "its gates shall never be closed" indicates that there will be continuous eternal activity by the saints, as their glorified bodies and will require no rest,
- These are the eternal joys of the saved
- That which defiles refers to the fallen angels or unbelievers, which is contrasted with the believer whose name is written in the Lamb's Book of Life.

DOCTRINES

ISRAEL

1. Israel has a future which was promised to Abraham. (Genesis 12:1-3)
2. Israel's future is based on regeneration. (Romans 9:6-14)
3. Israel's future is related to the land of Palestine. (Genesis 15:18, Numbers 34:1-12, Deuteronomy 30:1-9)
4. Israel has a King forever - the Son of David, the Lord Jesus Christ in the Millennium. (2 Samuel 7:8-16, Psalm 89:20-37)
5. The promises were confirmed to Jeremiah in the New Covenant (Jeremiah 31:31ff, Hebrews 8:8-13)
6. Israel's future begins as a nation at the Second Advent of Christ. (Zechariah 14:1-9)
7. Israel's future is guaranteed, even though the nation is now in dispersion under the discipline of God. (Isaiah 5:26-30, 14:1-3, 10:20-23, 11:11-16, Zechariah 10:6-12)
8. Israel had a purpose
 - a) To witness to the holiness of the one true God. (Deuteronomy 6:4, Isaiah 43:10,12)
 - b) To illustrate to the nations the blessings derived from serving the one true God. (Deuteronomy 33:26-29, 1 Chronicles 17:20-21, Psalm 144:15)
 - c) To receive, record and broadcast the Scriptures. (Deuteronomy 4:5-8, Romans 3:1-2)
 - d) To receive and proclaim the promised Messiah. (Genesis 3:15, 12:3, 2 Samuel 7:12-16, Isaiah 7:14, 9:6)
9. The nation Israel is now in dispersion under the discipline of God. The Church has replaced the mission of Israel during the Church Age. (Romans 11) When the Church is removed in the Rapture, Israel will again take up its purpose during the Tribulation (Revelation 7:4-8)

NATIONS AND RACES

1. God has set the geographical and historical boundaries for nations (Acts 17:26, Genesis 10:25; Deuteronomy 32:8).

Three Categories of Nations

Geographical
Racial
Linguistic

You can also have a combination of any of the three.

2. All nations and races are descended from Noah's three sons Ham, Shem and Japheth (Genesis 9:19).
3. The nations were dispersed after the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11:9).
4. Internationalism and one-worldism is therefore against the will of God (cf. Genesis 11:4,9). Satan is attempting to unite the world as a counterfeit to the Millennium, when Christ will reign as King.
God has ordained nationalism rather than internationalism. Internationalism has two systems: a) Religion, b) Political – World Brotherhood.
5. Nations are established by God to protect the freedoms and rights of people so that they may serve God peacefully (1Timothy 2:1-2).
6. The importance of free will - a government should not force people to accept or reject Christianity.
7. Freedoms in a nation are to be protected:
 - a) Externally by military forces. Believers should defend their own country.
 - b) Internally by police forces and courts (Romans 13:4). Capital punishment is an integral part of law enforcement (Genesis 9:6).
8. The effectiveness of believers within a nation determines its blessing or cursing (Deuteronomy 11:26-28, Genesis 18:17-33, Matthew 5:13).
9. When nations become evil, God must destroy them. Examples include:
 - a) Amorites (Genesis 15:16, Deuteronomy 7:2)
 - b) Chaldea (Daniel 5).
10. Jews were forbidden to intermarry with other nations, so that the Jewish religion would not be defiled by heathen practices (Deuteronomy 7:1-3, Ezra 10:2,14)
 - a) Solomon's union with foreign women was evil (Nehemiah 13:23-27)
 - b) Abraham forbade Isaac to marry outside his people (Genesis 28:1)
 - c) Esau's marriage to Hittites brought grief (Genesis 26:34,35)
 - d) Moses' marriage to an Ethiopian caused trouble (Numbers 12:1).
11. The threefold split of humanity appears in the book of Acts as examples of salvation:
 - a) An Ethiopian (Hamitic) is saved in (Acts 10:1-48)
 - b) Saul (Semitic) is saved in (Acts 9:1-16)
 - c) Cornelius (Japhetic) is saved in (Acts 10:1-48)
12. Divine institutions must be established to protect the national entity, to give stability. Three other divine institutions are Free will, Marriage and Family. [See God: Divine Institutions]
13. The importance of human freedom: freedom is based on privacy, hence the right of the individual to privacy as long as he does not contravene common law. Children should have limited freedom.
14. The national entity should allow people to own property and run business, free from government interference.
15. The national entity should provide a system of free enterprise for advancement through human energy and merit.
16. There must be a fair system of taxation.
17. A person must be free to accept or reject Christ as Saviour and the government should not penalize them whether they accept or reject the cross.

NATIONS: DESTINY OF NATIONS

1. In the Scriptures there are four words used for the non-Jewish, non-church groups. They are nations, gentiles, people and heathen. They are distinguished from the Jews and Church (1 Corinthians 10:32).

2. There is a time of history called the times of the Gentiles.
 a) It began when God gave them world rulership (Daniel 2:38; Jeremiah 27:6,7).
 b) It is fulfilled when Christ returns (Luke 21:24).
 c) It ends when Christ sets up His kingdom (Daniel 2:44; Revelation 11:15).
 It should not be confused with the Gentile or Family dispensation.

3. The destiny of nations is determined by their relationship:-
 a) their relationship to God (Psalm 33:12).
 b) to the law (Proverbs 14:34)
 c) to Satan (Isaiah 14:12,16)
 d) to God's programme (Acts 15:14)
 e) to the Jews (Genesis 12:3).

4. Prophetically, the destiny of nations is given as:
 a) Distress will come to them (Matthew 24:12; Luke 21:25).
 b) Many will be saved during the Tribulation (Revelation 7:9,14).
 c) War, famine and disease will affect them (Matthew 24:7,22).
 d) A world ruler will rule all nations (Revelation 13:7).
 e) All nations gather at Armageddon (Zechariah 14:2; Revelation 16:13-16).
 f) Christ will return in judgment (Revelation 19:11-21).
 g) Righteous Gentiles will enter His kingdom (Matthew 25:31-34).
 h) Nations will serve Him (Daniel 7:14).
 i) They continue into eternity (Revelation 21:24-26).

CONCLUSION

- Sin in every phase and vestige is completely excluded from this holy scene, (cf, Revelation. 20:7-10).
- The least spot or taint of evil could not stand the glare of the divine glory of God and the Lamb.
- Those who enter in are defined as the one's who are written in the Lamb's book of life.

REVELATION CH 22:1-5

The final revelation of the New Jerusalem is contained in Rev 22:1-5.

FIVE ETERNAL JOYS.

In this section we see the effects of the fall of Adam reversed, and through Jesus Christ, the last Adam (1 Corinthians 15:45-49), we have Paradise regained.

It should be remembered in using these terms, however, that what we have in Christ is far superior to anything Adam had in the garden.

22:1 And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.

22:2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

22:3 And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him:

22:4 And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads.

22:5 And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

KEY WORDS

Shewed	Deiknuo	To Show [Aorist Active Indicative]
Pure	Katharos	Pure, Clean
River	Potamos	A Flowing, A River

Water	Hudor	Water
Life	Zoe	Life, Motion
Clear	Lampros	Bright, Shining
Crystal	Krystallos	Crystal
Proceeding	Ekporeuomai	To Go Out Of [Present Middle Participle]
Throne	Thronos	Throne
God	Theos	God
Lamb	Arnion	Lamb
Midst	Mesos	Middle, Midst
Street	Plateia	A Broad, Wide Open Street
Either Side	Enteuthen	Hence
Tree	Xulon	Wood, Timber, Tree
Life	Zoe	Life
Bare	Poleo	To Do, Make [Present Active Participle]
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Fruits	Karpos	Fruit
Yielded	Apodidomai	To Give Off, Away Or Back [Present Active Participle]
Month	Men	A Month
Leaves	Phullon	A Leaf
Healing	Therapeuo	Attendance, Healing [
Nations	Ethnos	A Nation
Be	Eimi	Keep On Being [Future Middle Indicative]
Curse	Katanathema	A Thing Put Up For Cursing
Servants	Doulos	Servant
Serve	Latreuo	To Serve [Future Active Indicative]
See	Horao	To See, Discern, Take Heed [Future Middle Indicative]
Face	Prosopon	Face
Name	Onoma	Name
Foreheads	Metopon	Forehead, Between The Eyes
Night	Nux	Night
Need	Echo Chreia	Have Need [Present Active Indicative]
Candle	Luchnos	A Lamp
Light	Phos	Light, Radiance
Sun	Helios	Sun, Solar Light
Giveth Light	Photizo	To Give Light [Future Active Indicative]
Reign	Basileuo	To Reign, Be A King [Future Active Indicative]
For Ever And Ever	Eis Aion Aion	For Ever And Ever

ANALYSIS AND BACKGROUND.

- AMAZINGLY the last chapter of the Bible takes us back to the opening chapters of Genesis!!

The Water of Life. Remember that the Garden of Eden was watered by a river (Gen. 2:10-14). This is the river of the water of life.

In John 7:37-39 Jesus speaks of "rivers of living water" which anticipates the life-giving and sustaining ministry of the Holy Spirit to church age believers.

Therefore, this verse showcases the full and unified working of the Trinity, because the "living water" comes from the Throne of God and of the Lamb.

The river proceeds from the throne of God and of the Lamb in the same way the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son.

Believers on earth have only a small taste of this extremely refreshing water, but in the New Jerusalem we can drink to the full for the whole of eternity!

22:2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

The "street" here is singular as in Revelation 21:21. This street is the "one way" into heaven which is Christ, John 14:6.

In the median of this avenue is the tree of life.

The Tree of Life. This is PLURAL meaning "Each Tree".

The Tree of Life is the Lord Jesus Christ. The Tree of Life (Jesus Christ) was separated from Adam and Eve after the fall by Cherubim and flaming swords. (Genesis 3:24).

Now the tree is restored to the company of the saved. This is a fantastic proof of God's Righteousness and Justice.

- **Adam = 1 man = 1 tree. New Jerusalem = many saved = many trees.**
- The fruit is for the refreshment and gladness of His redeemed saints. In other words the curse is done away with.

At the fall the human race came under the curse of sin and death. The consequences of sin affects every phase of life (cf. Gen. 2:17, 3:14-19; Hebrews. 2:14-15).

The greatest part of this curse meant man's separation from his Creator. Now, because of the Saving work of the Lord Jesus Christ on the cross, perfect fellowship is restored.

- The New Jerusalem is the perfect city for perfect fellowship.
- The leaves are for the health of the nations during Messiah's glorious reign, just like the tree of life in the Garden of Eden was for the eternal health and life of Adam.

The leaves show that the comfort, health, and happiness of the saints depend on Christ.

The "healing of the nations" is an idea that comes from Ezekiel 47:12. The word "healing" is "therapeuo", which can also refer to a state of healthy existence.

Scripture proves that God intended us to **live forever** because He intended Adam to live forever! Remember that God also told Adam and Eve to be fruitful and multiply (Genesis 1:27, 28).

The whole of creation was built and engineered to be eternal to support the human race! (Genesis 1:29-31).

MEANING: The Trees location between the street of the city, where the saints travel and converse together, and the river of God's everlasting love, which flows in its fullness and glory, shows that Christ will be seen and enjoyed by all in the most happy and comfortable way that you can imagine.

Fellowship And Service. In this eternal state of restored fellowship the servants of God will serve Him.

The word "latreuo" used in verse 3 speaks of priestly service or worship.

"Horao" (or see as in verse 4) means to have a panoramic view. They shall fully see the Lord and will be seen as His possession.

The voice being a middle voice reinforces it will be to the believer's benefit to see the Lord face to face.

Dominion Regained. Again, at the fall, Adam lost the dominion God had given him (Genesis. 1:26), and the sceptre of world rule was usurped by Satan (2 Corinthians. 4:4).

APPLICATION

In John 7:37-39 Jesus speaks of "rivers of living water" which John tells us anticipates the life-giving and sustaining ministry of the Holy Spirit.

This being the case we see the full and unified working of the Trinity here, for the "living water" comes from the Throne of God and of the Lamb.

The Tree of Life is the death and resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ. The leaves are for the health of the nations during Messiah's glorious reign. The fruit is for the refreshment and gladness of His redeemed saints. In other words the curse is done away with.

The "healing of the nations" is an idea that comes from Ezekiel 47:12. The word "healing" is "therapeuo", which can also refer to a state of healthy existence.

God will perpetuate the Divine institution of nationalism forever as a memorial of Divine order and the diversity of His people.

The service of this life will be amplified in eternity according to our faithfulness. The parable of the talents (Matthew. 25:14ff) suggests that our eternal service may even be of the same kind, i.e., continuation of spiritual gifts.

In this service we "shall see His face" (cf Matthew. 5:8) and bear His name on our forehead (cf Revelation. 7:3, 9:4).

Under the illumination of God who is Light (1 John. 1:5) we "shall reign forever and ever." This fulfils the promise of Revelation . 2:26-27, 3:21.

DOCTRINES

VEGETARIANISM [see page 45]

GENESIS AND REVELATION COMPARED

1. Genesis shows man beginning in a beautiful paradise.
Revelation shows the wonderful paradise to come.
2. Genesis showed how man lost his chance to eat of the tree of life. (3:3-24)
Revelation shows man will again eat of that tree. (22:2)
3. Genesis tells of man's rebellion against God.
Revelation shows that man will cease to rebel against God.
4. Genesis shows the sorrow that resulted from sin.
Revelation shows that all sorrow will be removed. (21:4)
5. Genesis records the first death. (4:8)
Revelation promises that there shall be no more death. (21:4)
6. Genesis shows the beginning of the curse. (3:15-18)
Revelation shows the curse lifted. (22:3)
7. Genesis introduces Satan for the first time. (3:1-18)
Revelation shows the final doom of Satan. (20:10)
8. Genesis shows the first attempt to discredit the Word of God. (3:1-5)
Revelation promises a curse on those who alter the Word of God. (22:19)

WATER – LIVING WATER

1. SCRIPTURE (John 7:37-39)

37 "In the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried saying, if any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink. 38 He that believeth on me as the scriptures hath said out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. 39 But this spake he of the Spirit which they that believe on him should receive for the Holy Ghost was not yet given because that Jesus was not yet glorified."

2. Problem: What are the rivers of living water which flow from one.

3. Evaluation verse 37 - "In the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried saying, if any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink."

- a) This takes place at the end of the feast of Tabernacles. During the feast every day the golden pitcher has been taken to the water and filled. On the last day Jesus stood up and taught saying:
- b) "If " - third class condition maybe yes maybe no portrays human free will.
- c) "any man - TIS - mankind.
- d) "thirst" - present active subjunctive - shows a positive attitude towards a relationship with God. DIPSAO, the subjunctive mood goes with the third class condition active voice - the person's free will.
- e) "let him come" positive attitude at the point of gospel hearing - present active imperative.
- f) This is a syntactical answer to whether a person who desires a relationship with God will accept the gospel - the answer is yes - the subjunctive mood of 'thirst' is a potential whilst the imperative mood of 'let him come' is acceptance of the gospel.
- g) "unto " - preposition PROS plus to accusative - face to face to me.
- h) "drink " - present active imperative of PINO. To drink is non meritorious and is a picture of faith.

4. Verse 38 "He that believeth on me as the scriptures hath said out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water."

a) "He that believeth" is synonymous to "he that drinketh ". It is a present active participle which modifies the imperative of PISTEUO. In the Greek this shows that "he that believes " is an illustration of "he that drinks ".

b) "as the scripture hath said" - a prophetic recognition of the New Testament canon before the NT canon was formed.

- c) "out of his " - out of the believers.
- d) "belly" - KOILIA - this word is also used for the womb or inner person.
- e) "shall flow " - future active indicative of RHEO
 - i) future tense - when the Church Age begins.
 - ii) active voice - the Holy Spirit produces the character of the absent Christ.
 - iii) indicative mood - the reality of the ministry of the Holy Spirit in the Church Age.
- f) "rivers of living" - present active participle - rivers of always living.
- g) "water" - three spiritual uses for water:-
 - i) Salvation (Isaiah 55:1, Revelation 22:17)
 - ii) the Word (Ephesians 5:26).
 - iii) the Holy Spirit (John 7:38,39).

5. Verse 39 "But this spake he of the Spirit which they that believe on him should receive for the Holy Ghost was not yet given because that Jesus was not yet glorified."

- a) "But thus spake he of the Holy Spirit" - the rivers of living water deals with the Holy Spirit.
- b) "speak" PHEMI - to affirm, to confirm.
- c) "of" - PERI - preposition meaning concerning.
- d) "which they that believe" - aorist tense of PISTEUO.
- e) The contrast of the present tense of PISTEUO in verse 38 which is a challenge to the people to whom Jesus is talking with the aorist tense of verse 39 where those who will believe are shown should be noted.
- f) "on him " - Jesus Christ.
- g) "should receive" - MELLO - might receive or are about to receive.
- h) This talk is some six months before the Lord's death and eight months before the start of the Church Age.
- i) This therefore deals with the ministry of the Holy Spirit in the Church Age and is the means of production of divine good.
- j) for the Holy Spirit was not yet given because Christ was not yet glorified - Christ had to be at the right hand of God before the 1st advent of the Holy Spirit for universal indwelling of believers.
- k) cf. John 14:17 "but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you (Jewish age) and shall be in you (Church Age)".

6. Conclusion

The rivers of living water represents the outpouring of good works by the believer controlled by the Holy Spirit.

TREES

There are many references to trees in the Bible but the most important is the tree on which the Lord Jesus Christ died

1. Man's fall was associated with a tree Genesis 3:6,7
2. Everyone who hangs on a tree is cursed Deuteronomy 21:23, Galatians 3:13
3. Salvation is associated with a tree Hebrews 12:2, 1 Peter 2:24
4. The tree cast into the water at Marah made the bitter waters sweet Exodus 15:23-26
5. The man who walks close to God and his Word is like a tree planted by rivers of water Psalm 1:1-3
6. The blessed man is again seen as like a tree near the river Jeremiah 17:7,8
7. The winner of souls is likened to a tree Proverbs 11:30
8. Longevity in the Millennium is likened to the years of a tree Isaiah 65:22
9. Nebuchadnezzar the King of the Chaldean empire who is brought low is the tree cut down in Daniel 4

ADAM – THE FALL

1. SCRIPTURE - Genesis 2:19 - 5:5.

2. BIOGRAPHY

Adam ("red earth"), the first man, was created about 4000 BC, in the image of God. As the first man, he was created on the sixth day out of the earth from which he received his name. He was placed in the Garden of Eden where food was provided for him without heavy toil. He named all the animals. Finding no companionship in the animal kingdom God formed woman out of a rib of Adam. They lived for an indeterminate period in innocence in the garden where there was only one test of their free will - the tree of the knowledge of 'good and evil'. Eventually the woman, beguiled by the devil utilising the serpent, ate of the fruit of the tree. Adam, having to choose between God and the woman, chose the fallen

woman causing sin to enter into mankind. Adam, the woman and the serpent were all judged with penalties being applied to them all.

3. EVALUATION: Genesis 3:1-21.

- a) Satan indwells a beautiful serpent (3:1).
- b) He attempts to show that God is unfair (3:1).
- c) The woman is confused and misconstrues the command of God (3:2-3).
- d) Satan lies to the woman (3:4).
- e) Satan appeals to the woman's pride (3:5).
- f) The woman sins, and having tempted Adam, he disobeys God. (3:6-7).
- g) Their nakedness immediately becomes apparent and they attempt to cover it with fig leaf clothes (3:7).
- h) They attempt to hide from God (3:8).
- i) God makes the first approach of seeking out fallen man (3:9-10).
- j) Man and woman each try to blame others for their sin (3:11-13).
- k) The serpent is judged (3:14).
- l) The first gospel message (3:15).
- m) The woman's penalty (3:16).
- n) The man's penalty (3:17-19).
- o) The man is told he will eventually die (3:19).
- p) God provides man with a coat of skins (3:21).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) Satan can use many devices to deceive man (Genesis 3:1; Revelation 20:7-10)
- b) Knowledge of the Bible is essential to combat the wiles of the devil.
- c) Lies and pride are two of the greatest sins (Proverbs 6:16-19).
- d) Other believers who are out of fellowship can cause us to fall into sin (1 Corinthians 5:6).
- e) Human good (using our own works - fig leaves - to cover up sins) is not acceptable to God. The appearance of respectability does not necessarily reflect fellowship with God (Matthew 7:21-23).
- f) God always seeks out those who are lost (Luke 19:10).
- g) Sinful man will blame others or his environment for his condition rather than face his sin (1 Kings 18:17-18).
- h) God always provides grace before judgment (Romans 6:14).
- i) The gospel message is given. Salvation is for mankind, not for animals or Satan (Psalm 49:12; Revelation 20:10).
- j) The penalties on individuals are tailored for the individual. The woman who tried to rule over the man is herself ruled over (Proverbs 24:12).
- k) God provides a blood sacrifice to provide clothes of skin. Without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of sins (Hebrews 9:22).

JUDGMENT: CURSE

1. The curse of God is upon:

- a) animal creation (Genesis 3:14)
- b) ground (Genesis 3:17-19; Isaiah 24:5,6)
- c) whole creation (Romans 8:22)
- d) Israel's enemies (Genesis 12:3)
- e) the Jews when they turned from God's Word (Deuteronomy 28:15)
- f) those who preach a false gospel (Galatians 1:8,9).

2. Israel was cursed when they were dispersed but will be blessed when God restores them (Jeremiah 29:18; Zechariah 8:13).

3. Curses are on those who do not keep the Mosaic Law (Deuteronomy 27:26; Galatians 3:10) or love God (1 Corinthians 16:22).

4. The house of the wicked is cursed (Proverbs 3:33).

5. Those cast into everlasting fire are cursed (Matthew 25:41)

6. Christ was cursed for the believer on the cross (Galatians 3:13).

7. He bore the symbol of the curse, the crown of thorns (Matthew 27:29).

8. The curse is removed (Revelation 21:1-5; 22:3; Isaiah 11:6-8).

THE GOSPEL.

As we can see only people who have accepted Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour will be allowed to enter and enjoy eternal life in the New Jerusalem. It will be a type of enjoyment that we cannot possibly imagine here and now.

In fact **Revelation 21:6-7** is the **last Gospel message**, such is God's grace and desire that not one person should perish.

V6. And He said to me, "It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give freely to him who thirsts.

V7. He who overcomes shall inherit all things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son.

Overcomes: means to believe in the saving work of the Lord Jesus Christ and turn your back on the things of the world, just like the apostles did.

God wants to have a relationship with you, no matter how bad you have been. Please see that God has prepared a magnificent place for you in the magnificent city of New Jerusalem.

All God wants is to have you back home, living with Him in perfect happiness, peace, comfort, security and love. He wants you back home FOREVER AND EVER as he intended from when time began.

DON'T DELAY OR DENY YOURSELF ENTRY INTO YOUR TRUE HOME, FOR THIS WORLD IS RAPIDLY PASSING AWAY!!

DOCTRINES

ETERNITY FUTURE

In eternity future:

1. God reveals to us exceeding riches of His grace (Ephesians 2:7).
2. God brings many sons into glory (Hebrews 2:10).
3. Believers enjoy an inheritance (1 Peter 1:4).
4. It is God's purpose for the church to know the manifold wisdom of God (Ephesians 3:10).
5. All former things pass away. There will be no more death, sorrow, pain, crying, sea, night or sun. (Revelation 21:1-5,23)
6. The curse will be lifted (Revelation 22:3).
7. All things in heaven and earth will be gathered in Him (Ephesians 1:10).
8. The present creation will be forgotten (Isaiah 65:17).
9. A river of water of life will run (Revelation 22:1).
10. The tree of life will be seen again (Revelation 22:2).
11. The Son of God will rule eternally (Daniel 2:44; 7:13,14).
12. He will still be subject to the Father (John 10:29; 1 Corinthians 15:28).
13. The lake of fire will continue forever (Isaiah 66:24; Revelation 14:11).

CHRISTIAN LIFE: OVERCOMER

1. Definition of an overcomer - "For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? (1 John 5:4,5). It is seen that an overcomer is a believer and we become overcomers at the point of salvation.
2. "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God." - believers will live with God in heaven forever. (Revelation 2:7)
3. "He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death" - believers will not be subject to the lake of fire. (Revelation 2:11)

4. "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it." - believers are accepted by God on the basis of His provision. (Revelation 2:17)

5. "And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. And I will give him the morning star." - believers will rule over the nations and will be honoured. (Revelation 2:26-28)

6. "He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels." - believers are justified and sanctified by the death of our Lord and their names are permanently in the book of the living. (Revelation 3:5)

7. "Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name." - believers will have access to the Holy Places of God and will eternally be identified with Jesus Christ. (Revelation 3:12)

8. "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne." - believers will reign with the Lord Jesus Christ (Revelation 3:21)

CHRISTIAN LIFE - OVERCOMING BY FAITH

1. By faith learn to accept conditions as God's will for life and be thankful - Romans 8:28, 1 Thessalonians 3:3; 5:18
2. By faith maintain fellowship with God, walking in the light - 1 John 1:7
3. By faith consistently day by day examine your conduct, confessing all known sins - 1 Corinthians 11:28, 31 1 John 1:9
4. By faith receive the Word of God daily as being more necessary than daily food. - Matthew 4:4; 5:6, 2 Peter 3:18
5. By faith approach the throne of grace boldly in every case of need, requesting aid, casting every care on Him. - Hebrews 4:15,16; 1 Peter 5:7
6. By faith resist the attempts of Satan and he will flee from you. - Ephesians 6:10-13, 1 Peter 5:8
7. By faith maintain the habit of thinking and meditating on spiritual values and priorities - Philipians 4:6-9
8. Walk by faith and not by sight - 2 Corinthians 5:7

CHRIST: TESTIMONIES BY UNBELIEVERS

1. Judas Iscariot (Matthew 27:4) - I have sinned in that I have betrayed innocent blood.
2. Pontius Pilate (John 19:4,6) - I find no crime in him.
3. Herod the Usurper (Luke 23:15) - No, nor yet Herod for I sent you to him and, lo nothing worthy of death is done unto him.
4. Pilate's wife (Matthew 27:19) - Have nothing to do with this just man.
5. The dying thief (Luke 23:41) - This man hath done nothing amiss.
6. The centurion of the Golgotha detachment (Luke 23:47) - This man was a righteous man.
7. The Roman soldiers at Golgotha (Matthew 27:54) - truly this one was the son of God.

3. - HELL

WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT HELL.

INTRODUCTION

Hell is a subject that no one wants to hear about. Many may joke about it, but look and see what reaction you get if you say Hell is a real place and you really will go there. Not even the church today is prepared to teach about Hell. This is a very sad omission just for the sake of not offending people..

If you look at history, you will find that every culture, from the most primitive to the most advanced, have a God, or many gods, and a sense of punishment. Every culture has a legal system, where if you break the law, you are punished. The knowledge of punishment was revealed by God to man.

There is absolutely no way that man could ever think of this himself! Why would he invent a place of punishment and torture forever and ever? Does the theory of evolution explain this?

Why is the teaching of Hell so unpopular?

One notion is that Hell is a place of retributive punishment. The Australian legal system favours remedial punishment. Remedial punishment rejects the idea that pain, suffering or in the case of murder, death, is the best way to stop a person, or other people, from offending. Remedial punishment works on the theory that offenders can be "rehabilitated". The jail system is now geared to helping the criminal become a "better" person more able to integrate into society.

Remedial punishment may or may not work. What do you do with the offender who refuses to change and constantly offends?

Modern society regards retributive punishment as primitive and immoral. Somehow it is wrong to think that criminals should suffer. It is a sad fact that the results of remedial punishment seems to be making society more dangerous to live in, accompanied by the perception that the criminal receives more compassion than the victim. There are so many victims who believe that the justice system has failed them.

Retributive punishment scares us, because it ensures that a criminal is made to suffer for his crimes

Hell is retributive punishment given for the simple reason that wrong is wrong and God is against wrong. The thought of Hell goes straight through our hardened conscience and touches a deep sense of guilt, even though we don't want to admit it!

We live in a world that shows the result of abolishing retributive punishment. I don't think anyone who is old enough to remember will disagree that Australia was a much safer and freer country 40 or 50 years ago. That is when Australian schools and the justice system operated on Biblical principles.

When the cane was abolished in schools that is when disrespect for law and order was born.

Now we live with the result of that decision.

We complain about the lack of punishment on crime, we complain about how people refuse to take responsibility for their actions, we complain about how we have to lock up everything we own and imprison ourselves in our own homes.

Why should we be surprised? What do we expect living in a godless world? We have rejected God's way of teaching discipline! We want to live in a world that wants God's morals, but reject God himself! Isn't this crazy and mixed up?

It's important to note that the early church taught the doctrine of Hell to new believers like we teach the alphabet to children in the first year of school. Hebrews 6:1,2 describes eternal judgement as a basic principle.

The knowledge of Hell motivated new believers to evangelize their families and friends. They knew what a terrible fate Hell was and naturally did not want those they loved to go there. This is a practical lesson we can learn and apply from the early church in our Christian lives today.

WORD STUDY.

OLD TESTAMENT USAGE.

In the King James Version the word hell is used 31 times in the Old Testament. It is a translation of the Hebrew word "Sheol". There are two uses for the word Sheol.

1. It means the state of death, as being in a grave. See Psalm 6:5, 18:5. Sheol is for the wicked and the righteous, being the final resting place, or grave, for all people. (Job 21:13, 1 Samuel 2:6). It parallels the Hebrew words for "pit" or "hell". (Job 26:6).

2. Sheol is a place of consciousness. Death is not obliteration where we lose consciousness. The Bible from start to finish teaches the exact opposite, that we will be fully aware of our environment after we die!

NEW TESTAMENT

What is the usage in the Old Testament?

- Ten times our English word “Hell” is a translation of “Hades”, which is the Greek translation of the Hebrew “Sheol”.
- Eleven times in the gospels, The Lord Jesus used the Hebrew word “Gehenna”, which is translated Hell, not Hades, in the Bible. Gehenna refers to the final place of punishment for the ungodly. The only other time Hell is used to translate Gehenna is in James 3:6.

Where does the word Gehenna come from?

- “Gehenna” refers to the valley of the sons of Hinnom, which is just outside the south or southwest part of Jerusalem. This is the valley where children and babies were burnt as offerings to the god Molech by Ahaz in 2 Chronicles 28:3 and also by Manasseh in 33:6 of the same book. Molech was a huge idol with outstretched paws on which the children were tied prior to being burnt to death. Ahaz ruled around 735 BC.
- Its interesting to know that just on the other side of this valley is the potter’s field where Judas hung himself after the betrayal!

Gehenna in the New Testament is used in the prophetic sense of a place of fire, the Lake of Fire. This makes it different from Hades where the ungodly are held between the time of death and the Great White Throne Judgement. Gehenna therefore is the ultimate final place of punishment for all who have rejected God’s gift of Salvation in the sacrifice of His only Son, Jesus Christ.

2.1 DOCTRINE.

FIELD OF BLOOD

1. The Field of Blood was an area of land purchased with the betrayal money that Judas received from the Chief Priests. (Matthew 27:3-10; Acts 1:18,19).
2. Judas, seeing the enormity of his betrayal, throws the 30 pieces of silver in the temple and leaves to commit suicide (Matthew 27:5).
3. The Chief Priests realised that as the money had been paid for betrayal, the 30 pieces of silver could not be returned to the temple treasury, so they purchased a field for the burial of strangers which was named The Field of Blood (Matthew 27:6-8).
4. In (Acts 1:19) the field is known as Akeldama - the field of blood. It was located south of Jerusalem at the junction of the valleys of Kidron and Hinnom. Excavations in the area have shown 1st century tombs.
5. The purchase of the Field of Blood was to fulfil prophecy (Zechariah 11:12,13). Zechariah was in the scroll of Jeremiah, thus (Matthew 27:9) quotes it as a fulfilment of Jeremy the prophet.

1. WHAT DID THE LORD JESUS TEACH ABOUT HELL?

- The word Gehenna, is used only in the Gospels, and then only by Jesus Himself. The only exception is James 3:6.
- From this evidence it is clear that our knowledge of Hell comes only from Jesus Christ, as He is the sole authority.
- The Lord Jesus taught strongly about Hell on many occasions. In fact He taught much more on Hell than He did about Heaven.

The best place to start is Luke 16:19-31. This is the account given by the Lord Jesus about Lazarus and the rich man.

It should be noted that this portion of scripture is not a parable! This is stated as fact because it mentions proper names (Lazarus and Abraham) and a geographical location, which is Hades.

What are the lessons in this account?

1.1 That Hell is a place.

It is important to first study verses 20 and 21 to understand the context of this account.

V20. **“But there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, full of sores, who was laid at his gate.**

KEY WORDS.

Beggar - The original word does not mean “beggar,” but simply that he was “poor.”

It should have been translated poor to better show the contrast with the rich man.

Lazarus - The name Lazarus is Hebrew, and means a man destitute of help, a needy, poor man. It is a name given to describe his rock bottom condition. You cannot get lower in life than Lazarus!

Full of sores – He was covered with horrible and disgusting ulcers. Only the dogs got pleasure from licking his ulcers. These circumstances show very graphically how severe his suffering was, compared to the lavish, comfortable life of the rich man.

Laid at his gate. Lazarus was a part of the rich man’s furniture. The rich man knew Lazarus was there 24hours, 7 days a week! He did his best to ignore and avoid Lazarus.

Armed with this understanding we can now look closer at the following verses.

V22. **And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;**

They both died. Notice how Lazarus was carried by angels to Abraham’s bosom, or paradise located in Hades. The rich man however was buried. Burial then, as now, was an honour, and funerals were expensive, splendid, and ostentatious. This shows that the rich man had every earthly honour, and all that the world thinks as happy and desirable.

Since the ascension of Christ, Paradise has been empty, with the saved being transferred to the Third Heaven the dwelling place of God (2 Corinthians 12:1-4, Ephesians 4:7-10)

Believers who die now go directly to the Third Heaven ("at home with the Lord"), with soul and spirit but no resurrection body. (2 Corinthians 5:8)

V23. **And being in torments in Hades, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.**

HADES is divided into three sections, one section being divided from the other two by a "Great Gulf Fixed".

- Abraham's Bosom or Paradise - The saved went to Paradise until the ascension of Jesus Christ. The Lord said to the repentant thief - **"This day shall thou be with me in Paradise."** (Luke 23:43)
- Torments - The place of the unsaved until the last judgment at the end of the millennium. (Revelation 20:13)
- Tartarus - The prison of fallen angels probably from Genesis 6. (2 Peter 2:4)

KEY WORDS.

Being in torment -- The first thing that the rich man did in Hades was to look up, and see the poor man that once lay at his gate 24 hours, 7 days a week, now completely happy.

What a contrast! Just now he was rolling in wealth, and the poor man was at his gate. He did not expect this to happen! The tables are now justly turned on the rich man. He is now in absolute poverty!

The word “torment” means “pain, anguish”. In the ancient world certain methods of torture were used, such as, the rack (where the body was slowly stretched apart until the joints separated), or whipping, or burning. Only the most extreme forms of punishment and suffering can express the torment of the wicked.

The wicked in Hades “see” those who are in Heaven, even though they are far away. This is another major form of torture for them! Evil people hate to see other people happy. They are only happy when they cause misery and suffering to others.

Remember Romans 12:20.

“Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him. If he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.”

Would you like hot coals poured over your head? The lesson here is that Righteousness tortures evil!

1.2 That both mind and body will be tormented in Hell.

This is backed up in Matthew 18:8-9.

18:8 Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire.

18:9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

Note the two phrases “rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the everlasting fire”, and “rather than having two eyes to be cast into Hell fire.” Note also the link between “everlasting” in verse 8 and Hell (Gehenna) in verse 9. The torture of body and mind has no end! The Lord Jesus uses very strong language to warn people that they are better being maimed in this life and go to Heaven rather than to be in Hell with a complete body.

The rich man was tormented mentally by seeing Lazarus happy and comfortable in Paradise linked to the fact that he looked up with his eyes shows that he still had a body as well.

1.3 That Hell is forever.

The rich man could see there was no way out of Hades. He could see a great gulf between himself and Abraham. Notice also that the rich man’s requests to Abraham did not include wanting to be released from Hell.

V24. “Then he cried and said, ‘Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.’”-

The rich man “*cried to Father Abraham*”, meaning that he cried aloud, shrieking in pain, trying to get compassion. The rich man on earth gave loud commands, but in Hades he “*begs*” louder than Lazarus did at his gate.

See how he thinks in natural earthly terms. His tongue is hot, so he asks for a tiny, little drop of water to cool his tongue. Ever eaten a hot chilli? Do you dip the tip of your finger into water to cool your tongue? No! You gulp down the nearest glass of water and frantically wave your hand, only to get one brief second of relief.

Have you ever been burned? Fat spattering off a BBQ, touching a hot stove or when a tiny spark lands on you causes a lot of pain! How much pain would you be in if just your hand was held down on that hot stove? This is why he says, “For I am tormented in this flame.” He was conscious of his whole body being on fire! We cannot begin to imagine how much pain the rich man was in!!

- The wicked burn with fire, but are not consumed by it.

Also, on earth he was revolted by Lazarus’ ulcers, he would go nowhere near him, yet now he would be happy for Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water to cool his tongue!

- Notice that he did not beg to be released from that place. Those in Hades “know” that their sufferings will have no end.

Nor does he ask to go where Lazarus was. He had no “desire” to be in a holy place, and he knew there was no way to escape from Hades. He knew there was “ a great gulf fixed” between Hades and Heaven. (V26).

Skip now to verse 28.

V28. For I have five brothers, that he may testify to them, lest they also come to this place of torment.

KEY WORDS.

Place: The word here is “Topos”, from which we get the word topography. Topography is defined in the Oxford dictionary as a detailed description of a particular place. It’s very clear that Jesus is not talking of an imaginary place. It’s as real as the place where you sit right now!

The rich man does not want his brothers to enter Hades because their presence will torment him more! He is tormented and does not want them to go through what he is going through. He will be tormented by his own guilt.

1.4 Man condemns himself to Hell.

The rich man’s pleas to Abraham did not include wanting to be released. Anyone who chooses not to believe in Hell despite all the evidence in the Bible will end up in Hell.

- Romans 6:23. The wages of sin is death.
- Numbers 32:23. Be sure your sin will find you out.
- Galatians 6:7. Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man sows, that he shall also reap.

When you read more closely, you will notice that the rich man did not express any remorse for his earthly sinful life. He did not plead that he was sorry. Therefore, another lesson is:

1.5 Sin continues in Hell. Notice that:

- The rich man was still the same sinner in Hell.
- He asked Father Abraham for mercy, not God the Father. This shows that he was a religious man on earth.
- He loved Abraham, not God.
- He asked for water to cool his tongue, he did not ask for his sins to be forgiven!
- He knew that he was in Hades because he did not repent, and even in Hades he still would not repent.

God’s sentence is “**He who is unjust, let him be unjust still; he who is filthy, let him be filthy still.**” (Revelation 22:11).

John 5:28,29.

5:28 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

5:29 And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

These verses back up the account of Lazarus and the rich man. The lesson is that both saved and unsaved people will be resurrected. Dying is not a way of escape from this truth, but instead is the entry to it. Ask yourself the question, when you die what will your eyes open to?

We can therefore conclude that right now in Hades, evil, wicked, sinful behaviour has no limits. Men are without honour and women are without virtue.

Take the time to think about that. Do you think man is evil on Earth? Evil is nothing on Earth compared to what it is right now in Hades. This is why Hades is so terrifying! Sinners will continue to make Hades more and more terrifying.

- We see from this passage that Hades and Hell are God’s places where true and righteous justice is done.

The final lesson to learn from this account is:

1.6 That sinners would be miserable in Heaven.

All the citizens of Heaven will be worshipping, serving and praising God and the Lord Jesus Christ. Sinners would hate being in the presence of a God they do not love.

Sinners despised and rejected and crucified Jesus on earth, just like they will in the Millennium and so they will in Heaven. It seems strange, but Heaven would be Hell to the people who reject Christ!

- **If just one soul escaped from Hell into Heaven, Heaven would not be Heaven anymore.**

2.2 DOCTRINES**DEATH**

1. In essence, death means "separation".

2. Types of death:

- Physical death - is the separation of the soul from the body (Genesis 35:18).
- Spiritual death - is separation from God, having no relationship with God (Ephesians 2:1,12, Genesis 2:17,3:8)
- The second death - this is the Great White Throne judgment followed by the lake of fire for unbelievers - separation from the presence of God, punished forever (Revelation 20:12-15, 21:8)
- Positional death - Christians are identified with Jesus Christ in His death (separation from sin) and in His resurrection (living in righteousness) Romans 6:3-14 Colossians 2:12-14
- Sexual death - inability to procreate (Romans 4:17-21, Hebrews 11:11-12)
- Operational death - faith without works is non operational (James 2:26)
- Temporal death - a carnal believer, out of fellowship with God (Romans 8:6-8,13, Ephesians 5:14, 1 Timothy 5:6, James 1:15, Revelation 3:1)

3. Reasons for death:

- The work is finished. (John 19:30 cf Luke 23:46, 2 Timothy 4:7)
- For the glory of God - martyrdom (John 21:19, Acts 7:55-60)
- The sin unto death - extreme discipline for believers with hardened hearts against God (1 John 5:16)
- Suicide - superimposing your will over God's will for your life (1 Samuel 31:4, Matthew 27:5)
- The unique death of Christ - committing His own spirit to the Father (Luke 23:46)

EVIL

- DEFINITION: Evil is Satan's policy in opposition to God's doctrine. Evil is therefore a collection of beliefs and practises that back up Satan's viewpoint rather than God's.
- Evil is not necessarily bad, it is simply a policy that will take you away from the path that God prepared for you.
- False religion may be very moral and even ascetic (and therefore look "holy"), but if it is leading people away from God's revealed will it is evil.
- Often evil can masquerade as "good". People who believe that their "good works" can satisfy God's holy demands are deceived by evil doctrine. Romans 7:19,20,
- Only God's Word, Bible Doctrine can help the believer distinguish between true good and evil, Hebrews 3:13,14.
- Only a soul saturated in God's Word is truly protected from the subtlety of Satan's policy of evil. Proverbs 2:10-14, 3:7, 19:23.
- Only applied knowledge of God's Word negates and neutralises evil. Psalms 54:5, Romans 12:21, Isaiah 45.

8. The issue for the believer is the daily choice to accept God's Word and therefore protect oneself against evil. God watches for our choices. Proverbs 11:18,19, 22:3, 24:1-4, Ephesians 5:16, 2 Thessalonians 3:2,3.
9. The company of evil people will distort the thinking of the believer and confuse his/her witness. Isaiah 5:20, 1 Corinthians 15:23.
10. There is no evil in God at all. Psalm 5:4, 1 John 1:5, 4:4.
11. God judges evil and will condemn it to the lake of fire for ever at the final judgement. Psalm 34:16, Isaiah 13:11, Revelation 20:11ff
12. In spite of evil still existing in the world due to Satan's on-going presence throughout the Church Age, the Lord is still on the throne, and his hand is on all things.
13. Satan only does things by "permission" and we are in the Lord's hands and so are, in Christ, safe. Job 1:6-12, Proverbs 16:3, 4, Isaiah 45 : 6, 7.

JUDAS - BETRAYAL

1. SCRIPTURE Matthew 26:14-16, 25; 27:3-10. Mark 14:1-11. Luke 22:3-6. John 12:3-6; 13:2, 27-30. Acts 1:18,19.

2. BIOGRAPHY

Judas was one of the twelve disciples of Jesus Christ. He was the son of Simon (John 6:71) and was known as Judas Iscariot. Iscariot indicates that he was from Keriath which was located in Moab (Jeremiah 48:24,41 Amos 2:2) or Keriath Hezron (Joshua 15:25) which was situated 20 kilometres south of Hebron. Judas was the treasurer (John 13:29) and was also a thief (John 12:6). It was Judas who criticised Mary when she anointed the Lord with precious ointment (John 12 3-5). The ointment he saw as a source of income. His avarice eventually became so overpowering that he conspired with the religious leaders of the time to betray Jesus. He did not understand the whole implications of his action because when he saw what the authorities were doing to Jesus Christ, he felt sorry for his actions and eventually committed suicide (Acts 1:18,19).

3. EVALUATION

- a) Judas always appeared last on the list of disciples (Mark 3:14-19).
- b) He was described as a traitor (Luke 6:16) and betrayer (Matthew 10:4).
- c) Judas was an unbeliever who did not address Jesus as Lord (Kurios) but Rabbi - Teacher (Matthew 26:25).
- d) At Simon the leper's house, Mary came and anointed the feet of Jesus with ointment while they were eating (Mark 14:3).
- e) The disciples, led by Judas, complained about the waste of money, estimating it at a year's salary (Mark 14:5).
- f) After this Judas left to barter with the chief priests to betray Jesus (Mark 14:10,11; Zechariah 11:12; Exodus 21:32).
- g) At the last supper, Jesus gave Judas his last chance to be saved when he offered the sop, a portion of food reserved for honoured guests (John 13:26).
- h) Judas rejected Jesus and was then indwelt by Satan (John 13:27). He then went to betray Jesus.
- i) Judas betrayed Jesus with a kiss (Matthew 26:47-50).
- j) When Judas saw that Jesus was to be condemned he felt sorry (Metamelomai, Gk.) for what he had done (Matthew 27:3) but did not repent (Metaneo, Gk.) or change his mind about Jesus Christ (2 Corinthians 7:10).
- k) He went and hanged himself (Matthew 27:5) and his body fell into the Kidron Valley (Acts 1:18,19), at Alcadema - the field of blood (Zechariah 11:12,13).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) We should not doubt the Lord's sincerity in calling Judas to be a disciple. Jesus appealed to Judas on many occasions to believe in Him (2 Peter 3:9).
- b) Jesus' fore-knowledge does not imply fore-ordination that Judas must become the traitor.
- c) Judas was never a true believer. He remained a son of perdition (John 17:12).
- d) Unbelievers are called the sons of Satan (John 8:44).
- e) He was lost because he was never truly saved (John 3:36).
- f) Judas is an awful warning of the future for the unconverted follower of Jesus (Romans 8:9b).
- g) He was doomed and damned because he chose to be, and God confirmed him in that choice (Matthew 26:14-25).
- h) The love of money is the root of all evil (1 Timothy 6:10).
- i) Feeling sorry for your sins does not save; it is a change to belief in Christ (Hebrews 12:16,17).
- j) Religious apostates reject the truth and will dispose of collaborators as soon as they are no longer useful to them (Revelation 17:16).
- k) The unbeliever ends his life in misery (e.g. suicide) (Psalm 37:38; Psalm 73:17,18).

JUDAS - OUTLINE OF JUDAS' LIFE

1. His Opportunities

- a) He was from the tribe of Judah (John 6:71)
- b) He was called by Christ. (Luke 6:16)
- c) He was one of the twelve (Matthew 10:4)
- d) He was treasurer of the disciples. (John 12:6)
- e) He was present at the Last Supper. (John 13:26)

2. His Sowing

- a) He was covetous. (John 12:4-6)
- b) He was a thief. (John 12:6)
- c) He was Satan possessed. (Luke 22:3)
- d) He bargained to betray Jesus. (Mark 14:10, 11)
- e) He was bribed to become a traitor. (Matthew 26:14-16)

3. His Reaping

- a) His repentance. (Matthew 27:3)
- b) His act of restitution. (Matthew 27:4)
- c) His death. (Matthew 27:5, Acts 1:18)
- d) His curse. (Acts 1:20)
- e) His replacement. (1 Corinthians 15:7-10)

OTHER TEACHINGS OF THE LORD JESUS ABOUT HELL.

In the following scriptures, the Lord uses the word "Gehenna", translated Hell, to mean the Lake of Fire.

THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT.

1. Matthew 5:22. But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

The phrase "**But whoever says, "You fool!" shall be in danger of hell fire**" does not mean what we think. In the context of the passage the Lord is talking about unrighteous anger.

This phrase refers to an unbeliever calling a believer a moral fool who should be dead, and expresses the wish that they were dead. It is like us shouting angrily to someone, "may God damn you!" meaning that we want God to kill them and send them to Hell.

The Lord Jesus was teaching that when someone attacks a Christian for their belief, they show a negative attitude towards God Himself. If someone persists in this attitude until their death, then they will spend eternity in the Lake of Fire.

In Jesus' day, the valley of Hinnom (Gehenna) was still being used to throw the bodies of executed criminals into the burning dump. There is no doubting the severity of what the Lord was teaching!

2. Matthew 5:29,30.

5:29 And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell.

5:30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell.

Why is the Lord referring specifically to the right eye and right hand? The right eye is regarded as the master eye and the right hand is regarded as the master hand. Most people tend to be stronger on their right than their left. The Lord is using shock to teach about the danger of going to Hell. Mental attitude sins are associated with sight. Therefore if you have committed a sin involving the eye then you should get rid of it if it means you don't go to Hell. The same principle applies to the dominant hand.

Naturally anyone hearing this is shocked by it. Realistically no one is actually going to pluck out an eye or cut off a hand, but instead would look for another way of solving the problem. The only solution for a believer is to confess your sin as taught in 1 John 1:9. If you are an unbeliever, the sin problem is not solved unless you choose to accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour, who is God's plan for Salvation.

Hell is such a horrible place that the Lord Jesus taught that it is better to lose an eye or a hand if it stops you from going there. You can't get a warning stronger than that!

2.3 DOCTRINES**GOOD WORKS – ORIGINALLY TITLED WORKS**

1. Anything we can do in our own strength (human good) is unacceptable to God (Isaiah 64:6, Romans 8:8).
2. Only those things we do in the power of the Holy Spirit (divine good) are acceptable to God, since it is God Himself who produces the work in us (Ephesians 2:10).
3. When a believer produces human good he imitates an unbeliever (Galatians 5:19-21, 1 John 2:11, 3:4).
4. When a believer produces divine good he imitates Jesus Christ (Ephesians 5:1-2).
5. Human good is:
 - a) Identified as dead works (Hebrews 6:1).
 - b) Cannot save mankind (Titus 3:5).
 - c) Is condemned by God (1 Corinthians 3:11-16; Ecclesiastes 12:14).
 - d) Is the basis of indictment at the Last Judgment (Revelation 20:11-15).
 - e) Has no place in the plan of God (2 Timothy 1:9).
 - f) Is destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ (1 Corinthians 3:11-15).
6. Divine good is the basis of rewards (1 Corinthians 3:11-15).
7. God is satisfied with His own work in four general areas:
 - a) IN SALVATION
God approves of what God has done in the form of Jesus Christ. God the Father is propitiated by the work of God the Son on the cross. To be saved is to believe or trust on God the Son (Acts 16:31). Belief has no human merit, all the merit is in the work of Jesus Christ. God does not approve of human good. (Isaiah 64:6).
 - b) IN THE CHRISTIAN LIFE
God approves of the works, done under the filling of the Holy Spirit. Spirituality depends on who and what the Spirit is. The way to the filling of the Holy Spirit is confession of sins (1 John 1:9). Confession has no human merit. The Holy Spirit also provides at least one spiritual gift to each believer at salvation (1 Corinthians 12:8-11).
 - c) IN THE WORD OF GOD
The word of God is inspired by the Holy Spirit (2 Timothy 3:16; 2 Peter 1:20,21). It is the mind of Christ (1 Corinthians 2:16). The Holy Spirit makes the Word of God effective in our lives.
 - d) IN ETERNITY
In eternity human works are removed (1 Corinthians 3:12-15). God provides us with a new body (1 Corinthians 15:51-3). God provides us with an incorruptible inheritance (1 Peter 1:3-5). God provides everything for our eternal future (1 Thessalonians 4:17-18). God approves of His provision.
8. Spiritual growth in the full knowledge and application of Bible doctrine produces divine good in the life. Divine good in our lives is the production of the Holy Spirit filled and led believer. Ephesians 2:8-10, Colossians 1:9-10, 2 Timothy 2:21, 3:17.
9. As we produce much spiritual fruit in our life we demonstrate before all the victory of the Holy Spirit over the enemy. 2 Thessalonians 2:17. In heaven we are rewarded for all divine good production in time. 2 Corinthians 5:10, 9:8.
10. Spiritual production of divine good, through the ministries of the Holy Spirit, is contrasted to the production of human works (good and evil), the fruit of the Old Sin Nature. Refer HOLY SPIRIT, OLD SIN NATURE.
11. Human good; even the best that man can do in his own strength, has no value before God at all and has no place or part to play in the plan of God for the believer. 2 Timothy 1:9, Titus 3:5.
12. Human good works apart from God's power and direction, is the basis of man's condemnation before the throne of God. 1 Corinthians 3:11-16, Revelation 20:12-15.

3. Matthew 7:19. "Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire."

Although the word Hell is not used it is obvious that this is what Jesus is warning about. Jesus was warning the false prophets of the day. The analogy of a good tree bearing good fruit is an excellent way to judge a person's character. Put simply, do their actions match their words? The false prophets and unbelievers do not produce good fruit and like a useless tree that is cut down and burnt, so will they end up in the Lake of Fire.

See also the baptism of fire in Matthew 3:11,12

3:11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and *with* fire:

3:12 Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

And in Luke 6:43-45.

6:43 For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

6:44 For every tree is known by his own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.

6:45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT [see page 27]

JUDGMENT: BAPTISM OF FIRE

1. The Baptism of Fire is mentioned in 3 passages- (Matthew 3:11-12; 24:36-41, Luke 3:16-17, 2 Thessalonians 1:7-8).
2. It refers to the judgment and removal of all unbelievers from the earth at the Second Advent. In this way, only believers who survive the Tribulation, and resurrection saints, will enter the Millennial Kingdom.
3. There are parables of the baptism of fire in:
(Matthew 13:24-30, 36-43) - (the Wheat and the Tares)
(Matthew 13:47-50) - (the good and bad fish)

(Matthew 25:1-13) - (the Ten Virgins)
4. The Jewish baptism of fire is mentioned in (Ezekiel 20:34-48, Isaiah 1:25-26, Matthew 3:7-12)
5. The Gentile baptism of fire in (Matthew 25:31-46) (the sheep and the goats)
6. At the baptism of fire the books that are opened in (Daniel 7:10) are the ones that contain the names of unbelievers who have accepted the strong delusions from Satan during the Tribulation (2 Thessalonians 2:11-12)

4. Matthew 7:22,23.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Hell means being thrown out from the presence of Christ. Hell is a total separation from God. "Depart from me" is a once and for all command, never to be recalled or retracted!

This is a sobering passage as it deals with unbelievers who have ministered in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ without having the necessary personal relationship with Him.

One of the keys to the passage is the phrase "In that day" in verse 22. In that day refers to the day of the Last Judgment or the Great White Throne judgment as given in Revelation 20:11-15 which we will now examine.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

Human history reaches its conclusion so far as man's eternal destiny is concerned. The consequence of death is judgment Romans 5:12; Hebrews. 9:27, and for this reason eternal judgment is called "the second death." It is from this "second death" that we are saved from by being "born from above" when we accept Christ. If you are born twice (physically and spiritually) you die once, but if you are born only once you die twice, physically and the second death.

- The first death is when spirit and soul are separated from the body.
- At the second death, spirit, soul and body are re-united and it's the complete person that is thrown into the Lake of Fire. (Rev 20:14).

In verse 11 we have a Great White Throne. White is the colour of perfect righteousness. He who sits on it is the Lord Jesus Christ to whom all judgment is given. John 5:22-27 The phrase "Earth and heaven fled away" is the destruction of the universe at the end of history. 2 Peter 3:7,10-12. This old universe makes way for a new one which is created for eternity. Now the "small and the great" stand before an impartial holy and all knowing God Romans. 2:11. God is everywhere. There is no place that you can escape the omnipresent God. This can be of great comfort to the believer but is a sense of frustration and terror to the unbeliever. Hebrews 12:25-27

THE LAST JUDGMENT

1. The judgment of the Great White Throne is the last judgment. (Revelation 20:11, 15)
2. Only the unsaved are judged at the last judgment as there is no judgment for Christians. (Romans 8:1)
3. The last judgment occurs at the end of the Millennium. (Revelation 20:7-15)
4. The unsaved are judged according to their works from the Books of Works (Revelation 20:12)
5. The judgment is to show that the Human works of man cannot satisfy the justice of God. God is totally fair and shows that he is only satisfied by "The Good Work". The death of Christ on the Cross.
6. Having shown the unsaved they have failed to satisfy the holiness of God, the condemned are cast into the Lake of Fire. (Revelation 20:15)

Verse 12 introduces the resurrection of damnation. They stand in the presence of God. They will be given absolute justice based on the record of the books of the heavenly court.

On the one hand we have the Book of Life containing the names of all who believe in Jesus Christ. Obviously they are not found recorded here, the reason being their own refusal to trust in Christ as their Saviour. Therefore, having rejected the righteousness of God offered in Jesus Christ, they must stand on their own righteousness. Their sins are not mentioned. All their sins were paid for by Christ Romans. 5:16-18; 2 Corinthians 5:21; 2 Peter. 2:1; 1 John. 2:2 . Because of this sacrifice God has never imputed to them their own sins 2 Corinthians 5:19.

Another book is a book of a similar kind "allos" The word translated "according to" is the preposition "kata" which means according to a standard and that standard is the absolute standard of God. The only issue is this are you, in your own righteousness and merits, worthy of heaven? The answer as anticipated by Isaiah 64:6 is negative.

The two most striking things in this passage are that men are judged on their good works without reference to sins and that the ultimate issue is their rejection of Christ resulting in self-exclusion from the Book of Life. By the time you get to eternity the Book of Life will contain only the name of every person who has accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as Saviour. All human sin was judged at the cross with the exception of unbelief. We are reminded that not by works of righteousness that we have done but according to his mercy he saved us.- Titus 3:5

The concept of the sea in verse 13 may well relate to the fact that in the ancient world the abode of fallen spirits was protected by sea gates. Job 38:8, The only work that is satisfactory to God is the perfect work of the Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross. Judged is in the aorist passive indicative, the aorist tense indicates a point of time, the passive voice they receive judgment and the indicative mood is the reality of it.

Death and Hades are cast into the lake of fire in verse 14. "Cast" is in the aorist tense which means that at a point of time this occurs, it is divorced from time and perpetuated forever. The second death is eternal separation from God. Literally therefore it says "this the second death" which gives great emphasis to this sentence in the Greek.

Only unbelievers are in Hades at this time because of the transfer of the believers to heaven after the victory of the cross.

Verse 15 indicates that there is a genuine existence for unbelievers after physical death. At this point we are told that each will acknowledge the justice of their own sentence to eternal fire, as well as bow humbly and confess the glory of Jesus Christ Romans. 14:11; Philipians 2:10-11.

Therefore it is true that God does not condemn men to hell; they condemn themselves. In every one of them will be the knowledge of God's fairness and of the freedom of the gift of eternal life in Christ. In this sense everyone in hell will be a believer; they just believed too late. An understanding of the lake of fire is essential in understanding judgment and salvation.

In verse 22 they say "Did we not prophesy in thy name?" The use of the Greek word "ou" in the question expects the affirmative answer. They claim to have prophesied in Christ's name and to have done many miracles. But Jesus will tear off the sheepskin and lay bare the ravening wolf. "I never knew you" means "I was never acquainted with you". Christianity is a relationship. These people had no relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ.

Judas Iscariot would be a good example of this as he was an apostle to Israel, would have given evangelical messages and some may well have been saved under his ministry. He could well have cast out demons especially if Satan was trying to accredit this false witness.

Judas entered the broad way instead of the narrow way, built his house on the sand and not on the rock and was guilty of the only unpardonable act, disbelief.

It is quite possible for Satan to do this in assemblies which have a high level of healing signs as part of the accreditation of gifted people and may even convince people who do these acts that they are Christians even though they are not.

APPLICATION

Eternal Life exists only in Christ. To have life you must receive the Life Himself (John. 1:4, 14:6; 1 John. 5:11-12). If you reject Him, you actually condemn yourself to the Lake of Fire. The decision is your own; what will you do with Jesus Christ?

Not all miracles or great works which are done in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ are from him. They can be from a human or satanic background. Satan is the great counterfeiter. Look at the fruit.

Christianity is a relationship with the Lord Jesus. We grow in our relationship with Christ through Bible study because the Bible is the mind of Christ as the Apostle Paul states in 1 Corinthians 2:16. **"For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ."**

Bible doctrine is exact, categorical and absolute providing it is studied and rightly divided as commanded by God in 2 Timothy 3:16,17:

3:16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

3:17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

2.4 DOCTRINES

BOOKS

1. There are several books mentioned in the Bible:-

- a) The Book of Life.
- b) Lamb's Book of Life.
- c) The Books of Works.

2. The Book of Life contains the names of all who are physically alive.

[a] Names can be blotted out. (Revelation 3:5)

[b] However the names of Christian believers will never be blotted out but others, those who are lost, are blotted out.

[c] Those who are blotted out of the book of life are removed from the Book of Life on their physical death if they have not accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as Saviour.

[d] Their inclusion in the Book of Life shows the possibility of all to be saved which is God's will for the unbeliever (2 Peter 3:9) (See Sin: Atonement - Unlimited Atonement).

3. The Lamb's Book of Life is the record of the eternal purposes of God. The names in it are written through God's foreknowledge from before the foundation of the world (Revelation 13:8, 21:27).

They can never be blotted out. All that are written in the Lamb's Book of Life have eternal life. It is based on God being all-knowing.

4. The Book of Works are books from which unbelievers are judged at the Last Judgment at the Great White Throne. (Revelation 20:11-15). The good works in the Books of Works are held up in comparison to the good work of Christ and demonstrated to be deficient. They are then sentenced to the lake of fire - the second death. (Revelation 20:11-15)

2.5 OTHER TEACHINGS ABOUT PUNISHMENT AND HELL

1. Matthew 8:12. "But the sons of the kingdom will be cast out into outer darkness. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

This verse provides a terrifying glimpse of Hell.

- Sons of the Kingdom are the Jews who pretended to acknowledge God as King.

The Lord teaches that Hell is the place of outer darkness, so horrible that people cry intensely and grind their teeth against His perfect justice and the pain of what they have to endure.

Have you ever cried so much from a broken heart that your chest hurts? Have you ever cried so bitterly that your whole body shook? We have all cried like this when a loved one died, or when someone cruelly tricked us. This is what weeping means.

They weep in Hades and Hell because they can see the happiness of people in Heaven, knowing full well they could have been there! They weep uncontrollably full of grief knowing they put themselves in Hell!

The gnashing of teeth is a like wild, angry dog baring its fangs at you before it leaps at you ready to tear you apart. Remember the demon possessed boy in Mark 9:18 foaming at the mouth, gnashing his teeth, throwing himself to the ground?

In Hades and Hell you will gnash and grind your teeth with blind rage at yourself, at people you know, and at your sins and at God!

In Jesus' day, it was customary to have feasts and entertainments at night. The halls or dining rooms were brightly lit with lamps and torches. But the streets were entirely in darkness. The only sounds you heard were the cries of the poor, begging for something to be given to them. You also heard the moans and cries of the people that were sent out as unworthy or unruly guests. They gnashed their teeth, either with bitter cold in winter nights, or with indignation at their being thrown out.

Note the teaching that in Hell there is fire but strangely no light from it!

APPLICATION

Many people who were born and raised in Christian families, but reject Christ will end up in Hell. Membership of Christian parents does not make them acceptable to God.

2.6 DOCTRINES

WEEPING

1. Weeping is an expression of unbelief. e.g. The weeping of Numbers 14:1 and Hebrews 3:19.

2. Sinful type weeping

- a) David's tears of failure. (2 Samuel 18:33, 19:1-4)
- b) Breakdown of the mentality in catastrophe. (1 Samuel 30:4, Psalm 42:3)
- c) Weeping of the frustration and bitterness of old timers at the dedication of the second temple. (Ezra 3:12, 13)
- d) The crying of the drunkards in national disaster. (Joel 1:5)
- e) The weeping of fear because of the giants in the land. (Numbers 14:1)
- f) The weeping of unbelievers at judgment. (Matthew 8:12, 25:30, Luke 13:28)

3. Bona-fide areas of weeping.

- a) Jesus wept at the tomb of Lazarus (John 11:35). Weeping is therefore bona-fide at bereavement.
- b) Jesus wept over the city of Jerusalem (Luke 19:41) Weeping of patriotism.
- c) Jesus wept on the cross (Hebrews 5:7)
- d) As a mourner (1 Thessalonians 4:13)
- e) An expression of happiness and faith

f) A reaction to pain.

4. There comes a time when all weeping is going to cease. (Isaiah 30:19, Revelation 21:4) after death.

2. Matthew 11: 20-24.

11:20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not:

11:21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

11:22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.

11:23 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

11:24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment, than for thee

The Lord rebukes all the cities that saw His mighty works and yet did not repent. He announces their end with the words, "it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgement than for you. (V22).

To Capernaum the Lord says, "**it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgement than for you.**"

These words would have staggered people. Jesus was saying that the respectable Galilean fishing villages were more evil than heathen Tyre or the disgustingly sexually sick city of Sodom.

This strong warning applies to people who were brought up in Christian homes. This means that:

- They were taught the Bible.
- They went or still go to church. YET:
- They choose to reject Christ as saviour, and rely on their "good works" to get into Heaven. In their hearts they reject God.

This is a very dangerous situation to be in because the Lord says that these people will receive greater condemnation than anyone else. (Mark 12:38-40). These people will join Satan and his angels, and all of the above, in Hell, the Lake of Fire and brimstone.

However, people born and raised in non-Christian families anywhere in the world will enjoy eternal glory and happiness in Heaven because they believe the gospel and receive Jesus Christ.

Here we see the condemnation of three key cities for their unbelief: Chorazin, Bethsaida and Capernaum. The majority of the Lord's miracles were performed in these cities and had therefore the greatest demonstration of His claims to be the Messiah yet they rejected Him.

From the Scriptures we know of miracles which the Lord performed at Capernaum and Bethsaida but there is no miracle recorded in Chorazin nor even the fact that He was there at any time although it was a major city in which he was ministering.

There were according to this statement more miracles performed by our Lord in Chorazin than, for instance Jerusalem. This again shows how selective the Holy Spirit has been with recording incidents in the Ministry of our Lord.

John 21:24-25 says "**This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true. 25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.**"

As an illustration the Lord uses the cities of Tyre and Sidon which had fallen under the judgment of God because of their idolatry and wickedness. He said that if they had been privileged to see the miracles that He had performed they would have humbled themselves in repentance.

In the case of Capernaum, which had become His home town after His rejection at Nazareth, He had performed some of His most extraordinary miracles indicating quite clearly that He was the Messiah. He said that had Sodom, the capital of homosexuality, been so privileged it would have repented and been spared.

Capernaum's privilege was greater and its people should have repented and gladly acknowledged the Lord and but they missed this day of opportunity.

Sodom's sin of perversion was great but no sin is greater than Capernaum's rejection of the Holy Son of God.

It is of interest that in the days of our Lord there were four prominent cities in Galilee Chorazin, Bethsaida Capernaum and Tiberius. He pronounced judgment against the first three but not against Tiberius. What has been the result?

The destruction of Chorazin and Bethsaida is so complete that their exact sites are unknown. The location of Capernaum is not clear. Tiberius still stands. This remarkable fulfilment to prophecy is one more evidence of the Saviour's omniscience and the Bible's inspiration.

PROPHECIES

As God is omniscient and outside time His knowledge of future events is absolute. By placing prophecies in the Bible and historically or in the future fulfilling them with total accuracy God's signature on the Bible and its utmost trustworthiness is clearly demonstrated.

BETHSAIDA, CAPERNAUM, CHORAZIN

PROPHECY

Matthew 11:20-24 (30 AD): Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not: 21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. 22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. 23 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. 24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

FULFILLMENTS

"God's judgment of Bethsaida, Capernaum and Chorazin" At the time of Christ there were four cities on Lake Galilee, the three mentioned in this passage, and Tiberias.

History tells us that Capernaum and probably its sister cities were destroyed by an earthquake in 400AD. Some 300 years later the king of Damascus Albaldi decided to build a palace at Bethsaida, overlooking the lake because of its beauty. The palace, after several years construction, was abandoned due to the death of the king. The remains of the palace gradually disintegrated over the centuries.

There is little to indicate nowadays the sites of Bethsaida, Capernaum and Chorazin. This is demonstrated by the fact that the site of Bethsaida is variously placed at al-Tell or Mas'abinya, whilst Capernaum is placed either at Tell Hum or Khan Minya.

The fourth city, the city of Tiberias, which was not cursed by our Lord, has been partly destroyed and rebuilt over the centuries, yet it alone is still standing and flourishing after 19 centuries as testimony to the accuracy of this prophecy.

3. Matthew 10:28. "And do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. But rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Hell." (Gehenna).

Man does have the ability to kill the physical body, but not the ability to kill the soul. A Christian has no need to fear physical death because it opens the door to being instantly with the Lord in Heaven and all the peace and happiness and eternal glory that awaits us there.

God has the power to destroy body and soul in Hell. Destroy means to perish or lose, not to completely annihilate to nothing. BUT, God can annihilate us if He wants to.

However, physical death for those who do not know Christ is definitely to be feared because it is the doorway to Hell and eternal torture. Physical death for unbelievers is also spiritual death involving complete separation from God and Christ the results of which are unspeakably horrible.

This passage also proves that the bodies of the wicked will be raised up and reunited with the soul to be punished forever.

4. Matthew 13:24-30. Parable of the tares and the wheat.**KEY WORDS**

Tares = weeds or false grain. The children of Satan. This can also include “make believe” Christians who may be morally and religiously upright, but have not accepted Jesus as Lord and Saviour.

Wheat = True children of God.

Apparently in Israel a poisonous grass called bearded darnel grows in the wheat fields. This grass is identical in appearance to wheat, until they reach the ear stage of growth. It is only at this stage that they can be easily separated.

Mat 13:30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

If the tares were such a threat to the wheat, why would the farmer delay pulling them out straight away? The answer is because the roots of both plants are so close that you cannot pull up the tares without also pulling up the wheat. So it is easier to pull both up at the harvest and then separate them.

- At the harvest the tares are bundled together and burnt. Yet another warning about Hell.

In verses 37 to 43 the Lord explains the parable.

Mat 13:37: He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;

The Lord Jesus sowed during His life on Earth and He is still sowing right up to this day.

Mat 13:38 The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

The Lord points out that the tares may look like believers, that they sound like believers and may even act like believers (that is even attend churches) but in their hearts they are not believers. In other words, Satan can counterfeit believers, and religion is one of his major weapons.

Mat 13:39 The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

The end of the world means the Second Advent of Christ, preceding the Millennium. We are therefore in the time where the wheat and the tares are being allowed to grow together.

Mat 13:40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

Mat 13:41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity;

Mat 13:42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

The harvest of good and evil is scheduled for the Second Advent of Christ. These verses are also paralleled in Revelation 14:14-20.

2.7 DOCTRINES**RELIGION [see page 16]****5. Matthew 13: 49,50. The parable of the fishing net.**

“So it will be at the end of the age. The angels will come forth, separate the wicked from the just, and cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be wailing and gnashing of teeth.”

This is the same separation of good and evil as in the parable of the tares and wheat. The “end of the age” refers again to the Second Advent of Christ at the end of the Great Tribulation. The judgement referred to here is not to be confused with final Great White Throne judgement at the end of the Millennium. (Revelation 20:7-15).

The Lord Jesus Christ always spoke of the great truth of judgment day, where good and evil will be separated. He came to preach salvation; and it is a remarkable fact that the most fearful accounts of Hell and the associated eternal sufferings of the damned, in the Scriptures, are from the Lord. This is a convincing argument against those who say that all will be saved! (Universalism).

6. Matthew 18:6. “But whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in Me to sin, it would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were drowned in the depth of the sea.”

Although this is not a direct reference to Hell, it shows very dramatically the punishment that can be expected by the one who leads Christians into sin.

Millstones were very large and needed an animal to turn it. The Romans, the Macedonians, the Greeks and the ancient Syrians used this punishment on the worst criminals, especially for the crime of sacrilege. The body could never be recovered from the sea. It was gone forever. There is also a parallel passage in Mark 9:42.

The very next verse in Mark 9 is a direct reference to Hell. (Gehenna).

7. Mark 9:43, 45, 47.

Mar 9:43 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

Mar 9:45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

Mar 9:47 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:

The Lord says that it is better to cut off your hand and your foot (Proverb 6:18) and to pluck your eye out instead of being thrown into the fires of Hell with all your body parts intact! (Relate to Proverbs 6:12-15. A fun study to find others.) Parallels Matthew 18:8,9.

The hand may represent our sinful deeds or actions; the foot may represent the direction of travel. Do we run towards evil or are we walking with the Lord? The eye may represent our sinful lusts that are triggered by what we see.

A thief is a good example of these verses.

- The thief sees something that he likes and wants to steal. (He lusts after the item).
- His feet carry him towards the item that does not belong to him, and run away with the stolen property.
- His hands grab and clutch another person's property, the actually commit the crime of stealing.

If any of these go unchecked, they will lead us to eternal destruction.

BUT the Lord Jesus is not suggesting that this extreme action should actually be done. No, He is saying that it would be better to sacrifice these body parts rather than be condemned to Hell because of them. His purpose here is to shock us into thinking and recognizing that Hell is so horrible that we should desire not to spend eternity there! Our goal should be to go to Heaven, not to go to Hell.

You can amputate and mutilate any part of your body in an effort to stop sinning, but if you have not accepted Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour, you are still condemned to Hell. You must be right with God on the inside, in your heart and soul and be spiritually re born. This is the only solution to sin.

8. Mark 9:44, 46, 48. Three times the Lord Jesus gives the same description. **“Their worm does not die and the fire is not quenched.”** (Or is not put out.)

These verses are taken from Isaiah 66:24.

“And they shall go forth and look upon the corpses of the men who have transgressed against Me. For their worm does not die and their fire is not quenched. They shall be in abhorrence to all flesh.

This verse needs to be studied in the context of verses 22 and 23, which are a prophecy concerning God's judgement of Israel, resulting in repentance of their sin, and allowing them to be restored to God.

V22 For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain.

The certainty of the new creation is the same certainty that the people of God have about their own eternal destiny. The critic would argue all we have is two uncertainties, but they would be dead wrong, and they will be! The present creation has at least one thousand and seven years (for the Great Tribulation period – Daniel’s missing week of seven years, Daniel 9:25-26), to run at this point, but it is wearing down, and getting tired.

The Lord revives it for the Millennial period but that is all, the old creation is grown old like a blanket and like a blanket it is folded away. 2 Peter 3:10-14, Revelation 21:1ff. Even though the world passes away and is replaced by another (just imagine having a seat to watch that demonstration of God’s amazing power!), we have an eternal destiny to enjoy him forever. John 10:27-30, Hebrews 12:27-28.

V23 And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before me, saith the LORD.

Every new moon and every Sabbath there will be solemn worship “before the Lord”. Psalms 86:9, Zechariah 8:19-21, 14:16, Malachi 1:11, Colossians 2:16-17. This doesn’t mean that all the population of the world will have to come to Jerusalem every week! Today we can understand this verse with instantaneous communication by large screen televisions, that we can be anywhere and still be “face to face” with someone.

V24 And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.

The impact of the last days of the Great Tribulation period will be extensive, with the bodies of the slain lying everywhere around the land. The clean up for the entry into the city will be one thing, but this verse tells us that the fires of the destroyed armies are still burning for a considerable time afterwards. It may be that the nuclear weapons or oil is used for a perpetual flame as a memorial of the battles for the Millennial period as a reminder of this great rebellion on the part of fallen men. The judgment of the Lord upon the evil men is severe and dramatic. Psalms 58:10-11, Ezekiel 39:9-16, Zechariah 12:12-14, Revelation 19:17-21.

From the descriptions of the prophets the sight of the bodies after being dealt to by the Lord is indeed horrible and people realise just how bad the sins of man were when they see their bodies. This verse makes hard reading, but we must remember that the Lord has dealt with these people in accordance with his grace, right up until their final rebellion, and they only die horribly because they lived devoted solely to evil, and this is the inevitable result of evil.

KEY WORDS.

For their worm shall not die - This image refers to unburied bodies, especially on a battlefield. The Hebrew word refers to the worms and maggots that infest decaying bodies. This was the ultimate disgrace to a defeated army. Conquerors who really wanted to rub the glory of victory into the loser’s faces would leave the corpses of the soldiers to rot, or they would burn them as per the next part of the verse!

Neither shall their fire be quenched - The fire that consumes them burns perpetually. This image is taken from the fires in the valley of Hinnom, to burn rotten and decaying substances.

To quote the great theologian Albert Barnes:

“This place was regarded as a place of special abomination by the Jews. The filth of the city was thrown there, and it became extremely offensive. The air was polluted and infected with disease; the sight was horrific; and to preserve it in any manner pure, it was necessary to keep fires continually burning. The extreme loathsomeness of the place, the filth and putrefaction, the corruption of the atmosphere, and the lurid (ghastly) fires blazing by day and by night, made it one of the most appalling and loathsome objects with which a Jew was acquainted.”

So Mark 9:43,45 and 47 are the Lord Jesus’ description of future punishment. It is a fearful image showing the final suffering of the wicked in Hell.

9. Matthew 22:1-13. Parable of the wedding feast.

The Lord states that the ungodly are thrown into outer darkness, where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth.

In this parable the King refers to God the Father, and the son is the Lord Jesus Christ.

The wedding feast is a picture of the celebration that is Heaven.

The man without the wedding clothes is the one who thinks he qualifies for Heaven, but has never been clothed with the righteousness of God through the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ (2 Corinthians 5:21).

In the time of Christ it was customary to provide guests with appropriate clothing if they did not have any. It's clear that this man rejected the free provision of clothing and was therefore speechless when he was asked how he got in. He had no excuse.

Therefore he is rightly tied up and thrown out into the outer darkness where there is wailing and gnashing of teeth, which clearly suggests the place of Hell.

And in verse 14 Jesus says:

Mat 22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

This is "the moral of the story." Everyone, the whole of humanity, is invited to enjoy the feast in Heaven, but few are those who choose to accept His free provision to be clothed with His righteousness in His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. This is the only robe that is fit for Heaven.

In the same way, those without Christ have no right to be in Heaven. They are guilty as charged, as in Romans 3:19.

- **Are you going to be a part of the many or a part of the few?**

10. Matthew 23:15,33. The Lord calls the Pharisees a brood of vipers for devoting so much of their time and energy into recruiting converts, and then making them twice as much a son of hell as themselves (v15). Therefore they cannot escape the condemnation of Hell (v33).

This is stern language that Jesus directed solely towards religious leaders. Jesus was angry towards them because He is also Holy and Righteous. How many churches teach Jesus as all loving and nothing else? How many churches teach that because God is love, then we should tolerate evil? The Lord teaches that love also needs to be firm and just against evil. If Jesus was on Earth today, what do you think He would call church leaders?

11. Matthew 25:14-30. Parable of the Talents.

This parable is all about the eternal destiny of real believers and "pretend" believers.

In verses 14-18 the Lord Jesus is the master and the three servants were each given talents according to their own ability. Most commentators take the servants to mean anyone who professes to be a follower of Christ. In verse 14 the "far country" is Heaven, and in verse 19 we are told that the master returned after a long time. So verse 19 refers to the Lord's return at the Second Advent again.

In verses 21 and 23 were commended with the words "well done good and faithful servant" and "enter into the joy of the your lord." These servants were both good and faithful to their master and represent true believers who will enjoy the rewards and blessings of both the Millennium and the eternal state.

The Bible teaches strongly that faith produces good works. If no good works are evident, then there is no salvation. The Book of James is the book to study on this topic.

But what happened with the third servant?

Mat 25:24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed:

Mat 25:25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, *there* thou hast *that is* thine.

At first glance this servant's actions may sound logical and reasonable. At least he returned to the master the same amount that was given to him; surely this is good stewardship because at least he did not lose the talent?

But if you look more closely at these verses you can see that this servant insulted and abused his master. He accused his master of being a hard man and a thief, taking that which is not his! Then he comes out with a sorry excuse that he was scared of his master and decided to bury or hide his talent.

How did the master respond to these insults and accusations?

Mat 25:26 His lord answered and said unto him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed:

Mat 25:27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and *then* at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

The master replied by saying that if I was that kind of master, then why didn't you put the money in the bank and earn interest for me? Because the servant could not be bothered even to do this, the master called him wicked and lazy. Notice that the master is not agreeing with the servant's accusation, but is reasoning with him saying that if he were that kind of master, then why didn't he at least put the money in the bank rather than burying it in the dirt? Notice too that he was "wicked and lazy" which is the complete opposite of the first two servants who were "good and faithful."

The servant could not argue against his master's reasoning and instead condemned himself with his own words! This servant was not only wicked and lazy, but also proved himself to be a liar!

He showed himself to be a pretend believer. He could not produce any good works because he did not have any faith. So what was his punishment?

Mat 25:30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Note again the phrase "outer darkness" and "weeping and gnashing of teeth." In other words, he was banished to Hell, completely excluded from the presence of the Lord. (See also Matthew 8:12).

12. Matthew 25:32-41. The Parable of the sheep and the goats.

This parable describes God's judgement on the nations, or gentiles. This judgement is not the same as the Judgement Seat of Christ (believers only), or the Great White Throne Judgement. It also summarizes the preceding two parables concerning the wise and foolish virgins and the talents.

Verse 31 states that the Lord Jesus Christ will judge the nations on Earth at the Second Advent when He returns to set up His Millennial Kingdom.

Mat 25:31 When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:

On what will the nations be judged? Christ will judge the nations on how they treated Jews who chose to accept Christ as the Messiah and as their Lord and Saviour. This judgment is restricted to the seven year long Great Tribulation period. Compare this verse with Joel 3:1,2, 12-14 and Matthew 25:31-46.

Mat 25:32 And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:

KEY WORDS.

Nations: This is the Greek word "ethnos" and can also be correctly translated "gentiles".

Mat 25:33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

The right hand of Christ shows His affection, respect and honour on those who are His. The right hand is also a pledge of their future exaltation and glory in Heaven. This is why when meeting people or when making an oath we always use our right hand. This is also where the term "right hand man" comes from when describing a position of trust, respect and responsibility held within an organization.

The left hand shows the Lord's disapproval of them, and is a sign of disgrace, dishonour, and a pledge of the miserable condition they will quickly be in. These different situations plainly show the eternal future of every person, one will be acquitted, and made happy in Heaven, the other will be condemned and tormented in Hell.

In the Sanhedrin two Scribes stood before the judges, one on the right hand, and the other on the left hand. The scribe on the right hand of the judge wrote the sentences of acquittal, and the scribe on the left hand wrote the sentences of condemnation.

Who are the sheep and the goats?

- The sheep are the gentile believers who live in the Great Tribulation period.
- The goats are the gentile unbelievers from the Great Tribulation period.

There is also a third group consisting of saved Jews. This group is described in Joel chapter 3.

All through the Bible God disciplines nations, so there is every reason to believe that He will not judge the nations at the end of the Great Tribulation. Even today, God's discipline on the nations is clearly seen. Just look at the downward slide of the United Kingdom and also the United States. Neither of these nations are as powerful as they used to be when

they were closer to the Bible, and are economically very shaky. One can also see the sharp moral decline away from their original Biblical state.

Notice what happens to the goats:

Matthew 25:41 “Then He will also say to those on the left hand, ‘Depart from Me, you cursed, into everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels.’”

This is a very interesting verse when studied more closely. It actually describes a process that the unbeliever goes through on the way to the Lake of Fire.

Stage 1:

“Depart from me”. The sentence is passed on them. It was a disgrace to be set on the left hand; but that is not where the sentence ends. This means that they could not be near to Christ even though they would be under his disapproval. A child can be near to their parent after they have been disciplined, but not here. They were being told to depart from Jesus Christ who is the source of all righteousness, who is the Saviour and consequently from all hope of salvation. The Lord came into this world to give His peace, eternal life and rest. However they chose to reject His gift.

Stage 2:

Do they depart with a blessing? Do they hear one kind word of compassion for their fate? No, they depart with a curse. They that would not accept Christ’s blessing, must depart from him under the curse, the curse of the law on every one that breaks it, Galatians 3:10-13. The wicked are called *ye cursed*, because they have condemned themselves. See Isaiah 50:1.

Stage 3:

So the wicked depart, and depart with a curse. But do they depart to some peaceful, quiet place to think about and bemoan their loss? No, they must depart into *fire*, into the torment of fire to burn their whole body and soul. This fire is the wrath of the eternal God upon their guilty souls. (Heb 10:31; Rom 2:8,9).

Notice how they depart from Christ, under a curse into a prepared fire?

Prepared means that the Lake of Fire was prepared in the past with the result that it continues into the future. Note that Hell was not originally prepared for people. Instead it was made for Satan and his angels. God always wants to bless humanity. His desire is that not one person should perish:

John 3:15 That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

If someone chooses to reject the gift of eternal life made possible by the Lord Jesus Christ’s death and resurrection, then they automatically choose eternal life in the horrible and frightful place called Hell and the Lake of Fire.

- It is the hell of hell to depart from Christ.
- The Lake of Fire and brimstone, although empty, is burning right this moment waiting for its first occupants to be thrown in. Who are they? They are the Antichrist and the False Prophet. When will they be thrown in? At the Second Coming of Christ. Revelation 19: 20.
- Then, they will be followed by Satan, after he leads a rebellion, on his own, at the end of the Millennium. (Rev 20:10).
- Then Satan is followed by the Death and Hades at the Great White Throne Judgement. (Rev 20:14)

Death and Hades means the complete person made up of spirit, soul and body.

Remember that Hades is the place of conscious punishment without the physical body.

The first death is when spirit and soul is separated from the body.

At the second death, spirit, soul and body are re-united and it’s the complete person that is thrown into the Lake of Fire. (Rev 20:14).

- Finally anyone else not found in the Book of Life, are cast into the Lake of Fire. (Rev 20:15).

Be warned, when God at the Great White Throne judgement pronounces the final destiny to unbelievers, their punishment will be what they fear and hate the most.

So now we see that the wicked depart under a curse, not to some quiet peaceful place of banishment, but into a prepared fire. But do they simply pass through this fire into relief on the other side? No, because you are told it is an eternal fire. It will be a fire that will never go out! It will burn forever with not even a drop of water to cool the sinner's tongue!

Stage 4:

But does it end here? Surely this fate is bad enough? If they are going to burn in pain forever and ever then surely they will have some nice company to laugh and joke with to take away some of the pain?

No, they will be with Satan and his angels, their sworn enemies who helped to bring them to this misery. They chose to serve the Devil while they lived, and therefore are justly sentenced to be where he is, just as those that served Christ, are taken to be with Him in Heaven.

Can anyone imagine what it would be like to be in torments and have it added to by being around demons and Satan for all eternity? Is it not hell enough to be in a dirty, filthy jail with unrepentant murderers, rapists, liars and criminals of all descriptions? The worst jail on Earth would be heaven compared to being in the Lake of Fire with the Devil and his angels forever!

So we can see that there is much more to this warning than first meets the eye. Take time to seriously consider what the Lord is warning you about in this verse.

APPLICATION:

Science cannot possibly know anything about what happens after death. Human experience does not go past the grave.

The only reliable source of knowledge concerning Hell is the authority of God's Word, the Bible.

The Judgment of the Nations (Gentiles) is a powerful reminder that Christ and His people are one. Whatever affects a member of His family also affects Him. Whenever we show kindness, respect and love for our brother or sister in Christ, we also show the same to the Lord.

The opposite is also true, so this is a warning to anyone who attacks or persecutes a Christian, because they also attack and persecute the Lord.

TO SUMMARIZE:

1. The Lord Jesus Christ was the greatest "Hell fire" teacher that ever lived.
2. His warnings and descriptions of Hell are the plainest and the strongest in the Bible.
3. He taught Hell as a terrible, frightening but necessary fact.
4. Jesus taught repeatedly that the fire of Hell is a real fire.
5. He should know because He created it!
6. He also is the only one who saves us from it.
7. That is why He had to sacrifice Himself on the cross!

See how serious sin is? Would the God of Love die on the cross to stop us going to Hell if sin was only a fairy tale or a joke?

SO LOGICALLY:

1. If I don't believe any one of His teachings, then I must regard Jesus Christ as a liar.
2. If I think any scripture is not absolutely trustworthy or is false, then I must reject the Bible as the Word of God.
3. If I reject the Bible as the Word of God, then I must reject Jesus as the Son of God.
4. If I reject Jesus as the Son of God, then I must reject God's gift of salvation from my sin.

5. If I reject God's love and His gift of salvation, then I condemn myself to Hell.
6. If the Bible is proved false just on one point, then it cannot be God's Book. If it is just a man made book, then Christianity is just another man made religion.
7. If the Bible is true, then I must believe what it says about Hell. Logically, there is no middle ground, no maybes. You do not find the words "fence sitter" anywhere in the Bible.

2.8 DOCTRINES

JUDGMENT: GREAT WHITE THRONE [see page 70]

NATIONS: DESTINY OF NATIONS [see page 89]

PARABLES

1. A parable is a short narrative from which a spiritual message is deduced.
2. All parables are from the life and time of Christ.
3. The parable gives an outward story which either a believer or an unbeliever can understand.
4. They also teach a truth, only believers who know Him who is Truth, can understand. Only believers can understand Spiritual Truth. (1 Corinthians 2:14)
5. The interpretation of these parables requires deduction compatible with known truth.
6. The characters or incidents are figurative or typical.
7. Proper names or specific geographical locations are never used in parables. Thus the rich man and Lazarus in Hades is a true story.
8. Parable - para bole - to throw together. It signifies a placing of one thing beside another with a view to comparison.

PARABLES OF CHRIST

PARABLES	PLACE	REFERENCES
Parable of the Sower	Capernaum	Matthew 13:1-23
Parable of the Tares	Capernaum	Matthew 13:24-43
Growing Seed	Capernaum	Mark 4:26-29
Grain of Mustard Seed	Capernaum	Matthew 12:31, 32
Leaven	Capernaum	Matthew 13:33
Found Treasure	Capernaum	Matthew 13:44
Precious pearl	Capernaum	Matthew 13:45-46
Net	Capernaum	Matthew 13:47-50
Two Debtors	Capernaum	Luke 7:36-50
Unmerciful Servant	Capernaum	Matthew 18:21-35
Samaritan	Near Jericho	Luke 10:25-37
Rich fool	Galilee	Luke 12:13-21
Servants who waited for their Lord	Galilee	Luke 12:35-48
Barren Fig Tree	Galilee	Luke 13:6-9
Lost Sheep	Galilee	Luke 15:3-7
Lost coin	Galilee	Luke 15:8-10
Prodigal Son	Galilee	Luke 15:11-32
Dishonest steward	Galilee	Luke 16:1-12
Unjust Judge	Paraea	Luke 18:1-8
Pharisee and publican	Paraea	Luke 18:9-14
Labourers in the vineyard	Paraea	Matthew 20:1-16
Pounds	Jericho	Luke 19:12-27
Two sons	Jerusalem	Matthew 21:28-32
Vineyard	Jerusalem	Matthew 21:33-46
Marriage feast	Jerusalem	Matthew 22:1-14
The Virgins	Jerusalem	Matthew 25:1-13

Talents
Sheep and the Goats

Jerusalem
Jerusalem

Matthew 25:14-30
Matthew 25:31-46

JUDGMENT: - JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST

1. There are three types of judgment for believers in the Church Age.

a) Judgment of Sins:- The Lord Jesus Christ on the cross substituted the payment of all man's sins. The penalty of sin is death. (Romans 6:23) There is therefore no judgment for those in Christ Jesus. (Romans 8:1). The substitutionary death is given in 2 Corinthians 5:19-21, Galatians 3:13.

b) Judgment of Self:- We are told that if we judge ourselves we shall not be judged. Failure to do so brings discipline. (1 Corinthians 5:1-5, 11:31, 32, 2 Corinthians 2:5-7, Hebrews 12:7, 1 John 1:9)

c) Judgment Seat of Christ:- This is the evaluation of the production of believers for the purpose of reward (2 Corinthians 5:10)

2. The Judgment Seat of Christ is a time of reward. Our human works (wood, hay, stubble) will be burned, our works in the power of the Spirit (gold, silver, precious stones) will be rewarded. (1 Corinthians 3:11-16).

3. At the Judgment Seat of Christ the believer can be denied reward but can never lose his salvation. (2 Timothy 2:12-13)

4. Backslidden believers have no reward at the Judgment Seat of Christ. (Hebrews 6:7-12)

5. The Judgment Seat of Christ is illustrated by the famous athletic games in the ancient world. (1 Corinthians 9:24-27)

6. Rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ is based on grace. (James 2:12, 13)

7. Since we will be judged by Christ, we are not to judge each other (Matthew 7:1-2)

GOD: DIVINE INSTITUTIONS - NATIONS -NATIONAL DISCIPLINE

1. Discipline upon the damned. These nations have lived out their purpose in history and must be eliminated. This is shown in the story of Sodom in (Genesis 19). This also shows that God will not punish a nation if He can find a remnant in that nation.

God will never damn a people to extinction in history as long as there is a remnant left. Believers are the salt of the earth and are the insurance policy for the nation in which they reside (Matthew 5:13). God protects the believer from judgment (Genesis 19:17-23; Romans 8:1). This was done without any external armies by means of a natural catastrophe.

2. The principle is given in (Acts 17:26) where God has set the geographical and historical boundaries for nations. God is therefore sovereign in history and geography. This is done so that they should seek after the Lord (Acts 17:27). No nation is that apostate that a person does not have a chance to be saved as when a nation becomes apostate it is either destroyed or changed.

3. Another damned culture is the Amorites of (Genesis 15:16) where Abraham's seed would be in Egypt until such time that the apostasy of the Canaanites had matured. However when the Israelites came out of Egypt they were used by God to destroy the Amorites (Deuteronomy 7:2). As they were doing it for God they were not allowed to take booty (Joshua 6:17). This discipline was by direct military action and not by natural means. As the discipline continues they are warned about their attitude (Deuteronomy 9:3-6).

4. The fall of the Chaldean empire under Belshazzar to the Medo - Persians and the Scythians is an example of the destruction of a powerful empire overnight (Daniel 5). Daniel pointed out the God made Nebuchadnezzar king but when he became proud he was discipline until such time as he acknowledged the source of his prosperity. No nation can attain power unless God grants them it. Belshazzar had the testimony of Nebuchadnezzar but chose to ignore it.

5. Part of our responsibility is to pray for our country and its rulers (1 Timothy 2:1-2).

OTHER WRITINGS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.

Following is an example of some passages that teach the reality of severe, eternal punishment after death.

1. Romans 2:3-9. The Apostle Paul, under inspiration of the Holy Spirit, warns of the future judgement of God on evildoers. Their judgement will result in indignation, wrath, tribulation and anguish. Forever.

Rom 2:3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

Rom 2:4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

Rom 2:5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;

Rom 2:6 Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

Rom 2:7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life:

Rom 2:8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

Rom 2:9 Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

2. 1 Thessalonians 5:3. When Christ returns sudden destruction will hit unbelievers, like labor pains to a pregnant women, except there will be no escape.

1Th 5:3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

3. 2 Thessalonians 1:6-9. At the Second Coming of Christ, He and His mighty angels will in flaming fire take vengeance on the ungodly men. They will suffer eternal destruction and exclusion from the presence of the Lord.

2Th 1:6 Seeing *it is* a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you;

2Th 1:7 And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels,

2Th 1:8 In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

2Th 1:9 Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

4. Hebrews 10:29,30. This is another warning that evil will be judged and punished. People in the Old Testament could be punished without mercy for rejecting Moses' law on the testimony of two or three witnesses.

Heb 10:29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

Heb 10:30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance *belongeth* unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people.

The punishment for trampling on the Son of God, having no regard for the shedding of His blood and for insulting the Spirit of grace will be much, much more. Furthermore, God backs up His warning with the words "Vengeance is Mine, I will repay" (Deut 32:35) and again "the Lord will judge His people." (Deut 32:36).

5. James 3:6. We all know the power of the tongue. An evil tongue can destroy a person's personal life. All evil speech originates from Hell, or Gehenna, which is the word used here. Nowhere in the Bible is gossiping, lying, accusing or bad language taught as being good! The Bible clearly teaches just the opposite and identifies evil speech with Satan who is called the father of lies, the deceiver and the accuser.

Jam 3:6 And the tongue *is* a fire, a world of iniquity; so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell.

6. 2 Peter 2:4-9.

2Pe 2:4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast *them* down to hell, and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

God threw angels that sinned down to Hell (Actually Hades/Tartarus) in chains of darkness. This is reported as a fact. See Jude 6. These verses may be referring to the fallen angels in Genesis 6:2.

2Pe 2:5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

God saved Noah and his family, but judged and punished the rest of the ungodly world with the global flood. Again reported as a fact.

2Pe 2:6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example unto those that after should live ungodly;

2Pe 2:7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:

God saved Lot but judged and punished Sodom and Gomorrah with fire. Ancient clay tablets have been found that name these two cities, but their destruction was so complete it's as if they never existed! These cities suffered the vengeance of eternal fire. See Jude 7.

2Pe 2:9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:

This verse summarizes clearly verses 4-7. "Then the Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptations (a promise!), and, to reserve the unjust under punishment for the day of judgement." (Also a promise that will be carried out in the future!)

7. Revelation 14:11. This is clear and simple. "And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name."

The phrase day and night means continual.

8. Revelation 21:8. Again another clear and simple verse. "But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."

What is brimstone? It's the common name for sulphur. Sulphur is a soft, non-metallic element, commonly found as crystals. It melts at 113 degrees Celsius, and burns with a blue flame. It also gives off a poisonous, suffocating sulphur dioxide gas that smells like rotten eggs. It is usually associated with volcanic activity.

How would like to be around that stuff choking on the smell of rotten eggs and gasping for every breath forever and ever?

WHO GOES TO HELL?

1. Cowards. People who refused the Gospel because they were too scared to give up the things of the world or were too scared of losing friends and being made fun of.
2. Unbelieving. These are atheists, and people who believe in another god, and people who are pretend Christians. They look like Christians, smell like Christians, say all the right things, but in their hearts, the part that only God can see, they do not believe that Jesus Christ is Lord. They do not believe the gospel or hold to any of its truths. They are religious.
3. Abominable. Includes those who live in open sin; who practice detestable crimes; whose conduct causes disgust and abhorrence. Sadly, this is large group of people. See the notes on Romans 1:26 ff.
4. Murderers.
5. Sexually immoral. Another major group of people that is growing.
6. Sorcerers: Clairvoyants, fortune tellers, witches (white and black, the Lord does not discriminate), and drug users. The Greek word for sorcerers is where we get the word pharmacy.

7. Idolaters. Those who worship devils, or any idols representing God, or Christ, or the Virgin Mary, or saints. The living God of the Bible and the person of the Lord Jesus Christ is the only focus of our worship. Everything else is idolatry.
8. Liars. Both to God and man.

This is a list of blatant, external things. The Apostle Paul gives us another group.

9. 2 Thessalonians 1:8. “ **in flaming fire taking vengeance on those who do not obey the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.**”

These are people who on the outside are very nice people. They are decent, law abiding, caring parents, reliable and trustworthy employees, good neighbours and “never would hurt a fly type.”

They live by the “Golden Rule”.

BUT they have not trusted Christ as Saviour. They have refused to obey the gospel. The gospel says, “**Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and you will be saved, you and your household,**” Acts 16:31.

- Even if you were to do the impossible and not commit another sin for the rest of your life, God says He will take vengeance in flaming fire upon you because you have chosen to disobey His gospel.

Sadly most people belong to this group. If you are in this group, God is now warning you, begging you to get out of it by obeying His gospel, to believe in His Good News. There is no guarantee of a tomorrow for you!

The Lord Jesus warned in John 15:6. “**If anyone does not abide in Me; he is cast out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw them into the fire, and they are burned.**”

BUT God has another promise for you.

John 5:24. “**Most assuredly I say unto you, he who hears My word and believes in Him who sent Me has everlasting life, and shall not come into judgement, but has passed from death into life.**”

Notice the PAST TENSE! You already have eternal life, immortality, waiting for you, if only you choose to believe the gospel!

APPLICATION.

All who have died without Christ are now suffering in Hades, waiting for their final judgement. There is no second chance, no future hope. There is no point praying for the dead because not even Almighty God will help them.

Why won't He help them?

Because Hell is a suitable and appropriate punishment imposed by a holy, just and righteous God.

Anyone who cannot believe in Hell is an Ostrich. They refuse to look at the evidence that God, in His grace, surrounds us with. If you want evidence about Hell just read any newspaper. If there is suffering, sin and pain in this world, then why not in Hell?

Finally:

HELL IS RULED BY GOD AND EXISTS FOR HIS GLORY.

Revelation 11:16-18.

Rev 11:16 And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshiped God,

Rev 11:17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

Rev 11:18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

Revelation 16:5-7.

Rev 16:5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus.

Rev 16:6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.

Rev 16:7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments.

These Scriptures teach that Hell exists for God's glory.

Notice how all the citizens of Heaven praise and thank God for His righteous and just punishment of evil.

They praise Him that, at last, justice has been done, that at last evil has been perfectly repaid to the satisfaction of God and all of creation.

HALLELUJAH to that because this is exactly what the righteous on earth want right now!!

CHECK LIST: WHAT IS YOUR ETERNAL DESTINY?

Do you know for sure, without a shadow of a doubt, that you are destined for Heaven? Or are you doing things that you hope will qualify you for Heaven?

Please go through the following check list and note if you are doing any of them:

1. Trying to keep the ten commandments.
2. Giving time or money to charities.
3. Doing your best.
4. Leading a good life.
5. Doing good works.
6. Trying to obey the Golden Rule.
7. Tithing, or giving money to the church.
8. Church membership, active or inactive.
9. Regular church attendance.
10. Prayers.
11. Fasting.
12. Baptism.
13. Holy Communion.
14. Born of Christian Parents.
15. Confirmation.
16. Penance.
17. Extreme unction.
18. Membership of a lodge or fraternity.

The sad truth is that if you are doing any of these things thinking you are on your way to Heaven, you are very much mistaken. Here's why:

Action 1. - TRYING TO KEEP THE TEN COMMANDMENTS.

The ten commandments are meant to make us realise that it is impossible for us to keep them 100% all the time for our complete life span. They show our fallen sinful nature and emphasize our need for a Saviour. The ten commandments cannot save you.

Romans 3:20. **“Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.”**

Galatians 3:11. **But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith.**

Actions 2 to 4 - GIVING TIME OR MONEY TO CHARITIES., DOING YOUR BEST., LEADING A GOOD LIFE.

These will not get you to Heaven because God says:

Titus 3:5. **Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost (Spirit);**

Actions 5 to 7. DOING GOOD WORKS, TRYING TO OBEY THE GOLDEN RULE, TITHING, OR GIVING MONEY TO THE CHURCH.

These will not get you to Heaven because God says:

Ephesians 2:8,9. **For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Eph 2:9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.**

Actions 8-11 - CHURCH MEMBERSHIP, ACTIVE OR INACTIVE, REGULAR CHURCH ATTENDANCE, PRAYERS, FASTING.

Neither will these get you to Heaven because:

Isaiah 64:6. **But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.**

Actions 12-13 – BAPTISM AND HOLY COMMUNION

Baptism and communion are only for the saved, those who have personally accepted Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour. As with the ten commandments, these ordinances were not intended to be a means of salvation.

Acts 2:41. **Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.**

See also 1 Corinthians 11:2, 23-32.

Action 14 – BORN OF CHRISTIAN PARENTS

This is a false hope. If you have Christian parents, you still need salvation just like any one else.

John 1:12,13. **But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: 13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.**

Actions 15-18 – CONFIRMATION, PENANCES, EXTREME UNCTION, MEMBERSHIP OF A LODGE OR FRATERNITY.

None of these “ways to Heaven” are found in the Bible. They are only inventions of men made without consulting God’s Word. If anything, they are more a means of going to Hell.

There is only one way to Heaven and that is **FAITH IN THE LORD JESUS CHRIST ALONE.**

The Bible teaches from Genesis through to Revelation that man suffers from the disease of sin. God provided the cure with the sacrifice of His begotten Son, who was sinless, to take the punishment for our sin and to pay the debt we could never pay. The following are only small samples of Scripture as proof:

John 16:6. **Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.**

John 3:36. **He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.**

Acts 16:31. **And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.**

John 3:16 **For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.**

John 3:18. **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**

If you have studied this far, you are now at a major crossroad in your life. You have to answer this question:

“WHERE WILL YOU SPEND ETERNITY?”

PRAYER FOR SALVATION.

The good news is that you can be sure of escaping the horrible place of Hell, and instead be assured of a dwelling place in Heaven right now, wherever you are, by accepting God’s gift of salvation, by accepting His Son, Jesus Christ, as your Lord and Saviour.

In the quietness of your heart, in all sincerity and genuineness, just pray simply like this:

Dear Heavenly Father, I know that I am a sinner in need of salvation. I want to live with you in Heaven for all eternity. I believe that Jesus Christ is Your begotten Son who died on the cross to take my punishment for my sin.

Lord Jesus Christ, I now accept You into my heart as my Lord and Saviour. By Your Grace I want to live in fellowship with you, and I want to fulfil Your purpose for my life.

Thank you Lord Jesus for dying for me, so that I do not have to spend eternity in Hell. Thank you Father for your love and your gift of Salvation. Thank you Father for hearing my prayer. Thank you.

AMEN.

CONGRATULATIONS! You are now at peace with God and a member of His Royal family in Heaven!

Your eternal destiny is now safe and secure! You have made the most important, and best, decision in your life.

2.9 DOCTRINES

HELL AND HADES [see page 20]

CHRIST: SACRIFICE OF CHRIST [see page 15]

CHRIST: TESTIMONIES BY UNBELIEVERS [see page 97]

SALVATION [see page 16]

UNBELIEVER

1. God is Holy and cannot compromise with sin or evil. (Psalm 22:1-3, John 1:5)
2. Sin is solved at the Cross for all. (1 John 2:2)
3. The way is therefore open to all who will believe. (John 3:16,36, Acts 16:31)
4. Those who reject Christ are without hope, promise and God in the world. (Ephesians 2:12, Romans 5:14,17, 6:23)
5. We are born dead to God. (Psalm 51:5)
6. It is only through Christ that we can be born again. (John 14:6)

7. The unbeliever spurns this grace offer and the Lord who died for him. (Hebrews 2:1-4)
8. God is Love, but when love is spurned, that person has chosen darkness rather than light. They are therefore judged on the basis of their works as they have rejected the Lord's work for them. (John 3:16-21, Revelation 20:11-15)
9. The first stop for the unbeliever after death is Torments in Hades or Sheol . This is a place of regret, torment and anguish. It is also called the bottomless pit. (Revelation 9:2)
10. Their ultimate state is the Lake of Fire after they have been judicially sentenced to it by the Lord Jesus Christ at the Last Judgment where they are judged according to their works. (Revelation 14:11, 20:11-15, Matthew 8:12, 25:41, Mark 9:44, Jude 13)

CHRIST: TESTIMONIES ABOUT CHRIST IN ISAIAH

1. His Godhead (40:12-18, 51:13)
2. His Incarnation (7:14, 9:6)
3. His Lowly Youth (7:15, 9:1-2, 11:1, 53:2)
4. His Servant hood (11:2, 42:1)
5. His Mildness (42:2)
6. His Tenderness (42:3)
7. His Obedience (50:5)
8. His Message (61:1-2)
9. His Miracles (35:5-6)
10. His Sufferings (50:6, 52:13-15)
11. His Rejection (53:1-3)
12. His Passion (53:4-6)
13. His Vicarious Death (53:8)
14. His Burial (53:9)
15. His Resurrection (53:10)
16. His Ascension (52:13)
17. His High Priestly Ministry (53:12)
18. His Exaltation (52:13-15)
19. His Role as Judge (63:1-6)
20. His Second Advent (59:20-21)
21. His Millennial Reign (9:6-7, 11:3-9)

SALVATION: SIN – MAN'S NEED FOR SALVATION

1. Sin means to fall short (like an arrow falling short of the target) of the glory of God. (Romans 3:23)
2. Therefore, anything which does not meet God's standard of righteousness and holiness is sin.
3. It is clear to see, then, that mankind, in his own strength, cannot achieve the righteousness of God. (Romans 3:9-10)
4. The sin of Adam
 - a) Sin entered the world with Adam. (Genesis 3:1-5, Romans 5:12)

- b) The penalty of sin is death (Romans 6:23)
- i) spiritual death - separation from God in time (Genesis 3:8)
 - ii) physical death - separation of the soul from the body (Genesis 3:19, 5:5)
 - iii) eternal death - separation from God in the Lake of Fire Revelation 20:13-14)
- c) The man, Adam, as head over the woman, was therefore held responsible for sin (Romans 5:12)
- d) The penalty of sin is imputed to all people, and, apparently, passed down through the male in birth.
- e) Because Jesus was born of a virgin, He did not inherit the sin nature from Adam.
- f) As a sinless man, He was therefore qualified to offer Himself as a sacrifice to pay the penalty of sin (death - spiritual and physical).
- g) Because Christ has paid the penalty for sin for us, those who trust in Him are no longer condemned (Romans 5:19, 8:1)
5. All of creation is corrupted as a result of sin (Genesis 3:16-19, Romans 8:20-22)
6. Three types of sin:-
- a) Adam's sin is imputed to all mankind
 - b) As a result, we all inherit a sinful nature
 - c) As a result, we therefore commit personal sins
7. Sin manifests itself in three categories:
- a) Sins of action/deed
 - i) Examples include murder, adultery, stealing
 - b) Sins of the tongue/spoken
 - i) Examples include lying, slander, gossip, blasphemy
 - ii) Out of the seven "worst" sins, three are sins of the tongue. (Proverbs 6:16-19)
 - iii) Can result in the sin unto death. (Psalm 12:3)
 - iv) God protects and blesses the believer who is victimised by the sins of the tongue. (Matthew 5:11-12)
 - v) Troublemakers are always characterised by sins of the tongue. (Psalm 52:2)
 - c) Sins of the mind
 - i) Examples include pride, coveting, jealousy, bitterness, hatred, vindictiveness.
8. Recovery from sin
- a) When a believer sins his fellowship with God is disrupted. The Holy Spirit is grieved, and can no longer control your life.
 - b) Confess the known sin. (1 John 1:9, Psalm 66:18) God forgives these sins upon confession and cleanses from the unknown sins in the believer's life as well as known sins.
 - c) Examine your motivation - this involves full surrender to God. (Romans 12:1-2, 2 Corinthians 13:5)
 - d) Move on from the sin which you have confessed. Don't get tied up with guilt - this is another sin. (Philippians 3:13-14, Psalm 103:10-12)
 - e) Resume your active spiritual walk. Avoid areas where you might be tempted. (Hebrews 12:12-13)
 - f) Be reconciled to others once you have been reconciled to God. (James 5:16)
 - g) In human forgiveness we are told to forgive others even as God has forgiven us (Ephesians 4:32).
9. Jesus washed the feet of the disciples John 13:10
- a) The body is clean - we were eternally forgiven once and for all at the cross. (Hebrews 10:1-12).
 - b) The feet need regular washing - we must confess our sins to the Father to restore fellowship (1 John 1:9)
10. Satan constantly accuses us of our sins before God (Revelation 12:10). However, the Lord Jesus Christ is our Advocate/Lawyer in heaven (1 John 2:1). He pleads for us by saying that the penalty for that sin has been paid in full.
11. Names for sin include:-
- a) Unbelief - denial of the truth. (John 16:9, Hebrews 3:12)
 - b) Lawlessness - rejection of rules of life. (1 Timothy 1:9)
 - c) Iniquity - evil acts. (Acts 8:22, 23)
 - d) Trespass - encroachment on God's authority. (Ephesians 2:1)
 - e) Disobedience - refusal to obey. (Hebrews 2:2)
 - f) Transgression - violation of law. (Luke 15:29, Galatians 3:19)
12. The sin unto death is the physical death of a believer, due to habitual unconfessed sin or rebellion against God. (1 John 5:16, 17, 1 Corinthians 11:31, 32) Examples
- a) The Corinthian Pervert - (1 Corinthians 5)
 - b) The Corinthians who habitually came to the Lord's table in an unworthy manner. (1 Corinthians 11:27-32)
 - c) Moses (Deuteronomy 32:48-52)
 - d) Achan (Joshua 7:16-26)
 - e) Ananias and Sapphira (Acts 5:1 -11)
13. There is only one sin which can't be forgiven - the unpardonable sin - rejection of Jesus Christ.

- a) It is based upon rejection of the ministry of the Holy Spirit to reveal the Lord Jesus Christ as God and Saviour. Genesis 6:3, John 16:7-11, Hebrews 10:29.
- b) Synonyms for the unpardonable sin are: wilful sin Hebrews 10:26-31, blasphemy against the Holy Spirit Matthew 12:31, resisting the Holy Spirit Acts 7:51, insulting the Holy Spirit Hebrews 10:29
14. The first recorded sin was that of Satan - pride (Isaiah 14:12-14)
15. God is not the author of sin nor the author of temptation. It is incompatible with the nature of God for Him to create sin because of His divine character. (James 1:13).
16. Temptation comes from the world, the flesh (sin nature within man), or Satan. If he entertains the sin, man then chooses to sin - sin is therefore a result of man's own free will. (James 1:14)

SALVATION: SIN - BARRIER BETWEEN MAN AND GOD

INTRODUCTION

1. The Character of God:

- a) God is sovereign, absolute righteousness, justice, love, eternal life, all powerful, all knowing everywhere, unchangeable and truth.
- b) God is one in essence but three in personality: God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. These three personalities have the same essence.
- c) God the Father is the planner of man's salvation; God the Son is the executor of the plan of salvation, and God the Holy Spirit is the revealer of this plan.

2. God's Divine Plan:

- a) A conference was held in eternity past between God the Father, Son and Holy Spirit (Divine Planning) whereby it was made possible for man to have fellowship with God.
- b) God's foreknowledge recognized a barrier would exist in time and that all people would be behind this barrier. (Romans 3:23)
- c) Sin is a failure to measure up to God's perfect righteousness, a failure to possess "The perfect righteousness". Man cannot remove this barrier. God's Righteousness and Justice must be satisfied before His love can come to man.
- d) God the Father is the author of a plan whereby He decided to treat the human race on the basis of Grace (all the Father does for us). Grace is receiving a gift. It is undeserved and unmerited, and contrary to all human concepts.
- e) God the Son removed the barrier by His death on the cross. We receive Him as our personal Saviour, and perfect righteousness is credited to us. (2 Corinthians 5:21)

AN EXPLANATION OF THE BARRIER AND ITS REMOVAL

1. Problem of Sin:

- a) Sin exists in three categories: imputed sin, (all sinned when Adam sinned) inherent sin (the sinful nature) personal sin (sins committed).
- b) Man is a sinner because Adam sinned and passed down the sin nature to the human race. The penalty of sin is spiritual death (Romans 5:12, 6:23) Every member of the human race is a sinner as far as God is concerned. (Romans 3:23)
- c) In John 8:31-32 Jesus Christ addressed the Jews who believed on Him and told them to go on in truth and use what He provided. Truth sets us free from the Mosaic Law to serve the Lord and operate in grace.
- d) The unbelieving, religious Jews (v 33) said they were Abraham's seed and not in bondage. They were actually in bondage to the Roman Empire, their religious leaders, and the Mosaic Law. He told them about the bondage of sin.
- e) They are all born in the slavery of sin, for no member of the human race can free himself or other members of the human race. Jesus Christ became true humanity to liberate the human race. He was born outside the slavery of sin by the virgin birth as the God-Man. He paid the price for freedom of the human race - this is redemption.

2. Solution to the Problem of Sin: Redemption and Atonement:

- a) The "son abides in the house forever" (John 8:35), for Jesus Christ is "the son". He is eternal life and holy and when man believes on Him man is free and enters into union with Jesus Christ. Christianity is a relationship to Jesus Christ, not a religion.
- b) The purchase price of our redemption is His blood (1 Peter 1:18,19, Ephesians 1:7, Revelation 1:5, Hebrews 9:11-14, Galatians 3:13) , representing His death. Jesus Christ bore the sins of the whole world (past, present and future) on the cross.
- c) God is absolute righteousness and justice; the wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23, Colossians 2:14). Jesus Christ cancelled the "IOU" the human race owed God. The human race owes God perfect righteousness.
- d) God is perfect righteousness and we cannot pay perfect righteousness. Jesus Christ died on the cross, paying the penalty of our sins. This is expiation (Romans 5:8)
- e) The doctrines of Redemption and Expiation are found in Psalm 22:1-6. God the Father and Holy Spirit left the Son because He was bearing our sins on the cross. (Matthew 27:46)

3. The Problem of the Penalty of Sin solved by Expiation (Colossians 2:14)(Romans 6:23)

- a) Expiation and Propitiation are two sides of the same coin with propitiation being in relation to God while expiation looks at the problem from man's side.
- b) By expiation the offence which renders the person guilty in the sight of God is covered from the eyes of God by the effective dealing with the problem by propitiation.

4. The Problem of Physical Birth (John 3) and its Solution: Regeneration:(John 3:1-15)

- a) Nicodemus (v 1) was a Pharisee. He was a very religious man, attending church three times a day and praying seven times a day. He was sincere and was a product of "salvation by works".
- b) He was also a ruler of the Jews. He came to Jesus by night because he was too busy during the day doing "good". (v 2)
- c) He called Jesus Rabbi or "Doctor". He admitted more than most Pharisees for he said they knew Jesus came from God, for no one could keep doing the miracles He did except God was with Him. (v 2)
- d) Jesus interrupted, knowing his problem. "Except a man be born again". Nicodemus needed to be born again. (v 3)
- e) Why is the new birth necessary? Man is born in this world with a soul (ability to understand and categorize human phenomena), a conscience (standard by which we judge right or wrong), and a sin nature (the source of all personal sins). The human spirit is inactivated. We are born physically alive and capable of having fellowship with members of the human race, but we are spiritually dead and cannot have fellowship with God (Ephesians 2:1). We need to be born again.
- f) Nicodemus' response (v 4). He cannot think in terms of spiritual things for he has no human spirit. He asked if he could be born again physically.
- g) The new birth is a spiritual birth (v 5), so Jesus Christ uses spiritual language, - water.
 - i) The context determines the meaning of "water" (1) Salvation - (Isaiah 55:1, Revelation 22:17) (2) God the Holy Spirit - (John 7:37-39) (3) God's Word - (1 Peter 1:23, Ephesians 5:26, James 1:18)
 - ii) Here "water" is used symbolically for God's Word. The new birth is a spiritual birth. The Kingdom of God is the kingdom of eternal relationship with God.
- h) Contrast of two births (v 6). "That which is born of the flesh is flesh (physical birth). That which is born of the Spirit is spirit (spiritual birth)." Nicodemus should not be surprised (v 7). He needed to be born again.
- i) The illustration (v 8) the wind. It can be heard but not seen. The new birth is not visible. Nicodemus still does not understand (v 9).
- j) Jesus Christ used sarcasm (v 10,11) to shock Nicodemus. He is a doctor of divinity and does not understand. The Trinity ("we") knows what they speak (all knowing). Nicodemus does not have an open mind.
- k) No member of the human race (v 13) ever ascended, but Jesus Christ who came from heaven (as the God Man). As God He is everywhere, and as God and Man, Jesus Christ is on earth at the same time.
- l) How to be born again (v 14,15). Jesus Christ refers to (Numbers 21:4-9) the incident of the brazen serpent which was raised on a pole. This pictures Jesus Christ hanging on the cross bearing the sins of the world. (Colossians 2:14,15)
- m) The result (v 15). Whoever believes in Jesus Christ shall not perish but have eternal life. The problem of physical birth is removed by the new birth. We are born spiritually by regeneration or the new birth.

5. Problem of Human Righteousness and Its Solution: Justification and Imputation:

- a) Man has no righteousness in himself as far as God's viewpoint is concerned although he may be more righteous than other members of the human race when he compares himself with them. (Isaiah 64:6)
- b) God is absolute righteousness and He cannot have fellowship with us when we have human righteousness. Good deeds put us more in debt to God. (Romans 4:1-4)
- c) Perfect or absolute righteousness is credited or imputed to us at the moment of salvation. (2 Corinthians 5:21) -imputation.
- d) We are justified or made righteous on the basis of the absolute righteousness which God gives us.

6. Problem of the Character of God and Its Solution: Propitiation and Reconciliation.

- a) Propitiation is an act of God whereby He is satisfied with the death of Jesus Christ on the cross. Jesus Christ satisfied the righteousness and justice of God.
- b) Reconciliation looks at the cross from man's viewpoint. Man is reconciled to God. God is never said to be reconciled. Propitiation looks at the cross from God's viewpoint.

7. Problem of Position in Adam and Its Solution: Positional in Christ

- a) At the moment of salvation we enter into union with Jesus Christ (Romans 8:38,39, 2 Corinthians 5:17). This is called the baptism of the Holy Spirit (1 Corinthians 12:13)
- b) By our first birth we are "in Adam" (1 Corinthians 15:22). By the new birth we share Christ's eternal life, His righteousness, His destiny, His sonship, His priesthood. etc. Everything He is, we are-, and all He has, we have.
- c) Christianity is a relationship to Jesus Christ that cannot change. The barrier between God and man has been removed by Jesus Christ on the cross.
- d) The issue now is the person of Jesus Christ. He has solved the problem of sin in the human race.

SUMMARY OF THE BARRIER AND ITS REMOVAL

BARRIER

WORK OF CHRIST

SIN

(Romans 3:23)

Redemption (1 Corinthians 1:29-30, Colossians 1:14)

	Atonement (1 John 2:2, 2 Peter 2:1)
PENALTY (Romans 6:23)	Expiation (Colossians 2:14)
BIRTH (John 3:6)	Regeneration (John 3:3, Galatians 3:26, John 1:11-12)
CHARACTER OF GOD (Romans 3:23)	Propitiation (1 John 2:2, Romans 3:25)
RIGHTEOUSNESS OF MAN (Isaiah 64:6)	Justification (Romans 3:24, Romans 5:1) Imputation (Romans 3:22, 2 Corinthians 5:21)
LIFE (1 Corinthians 15:22)	Position in Christ (1 John 5:11-12)

2.10 WHY BELIEVE THE BIBLE?

The question of Heaven and Hell is very important to every person on the face of the Earth. You may have asked yourself the following questions:

- What makes the Bible so special?
- Why should I choose to believe that the Bible is a book from God?
- How do I know that I can trust the Bible?
- Why should I believe that the Bible has no errors?

These are reasonable questions that deserve to be answered. How you regard the Bible will determine your belief system, your reasoning and ultimately your eternal destiny.

The aim of the following doctrines is to answer these questions and to show that the Bible is God's Word, that you can trust it as being completely true. This is important to any topic of Bible study, not just to whether you should believe in Heaven and Hell and if you are going to either of these places.

For a more complete treatment of this subject please refer to the EBCWA publication "Proofs that the Bible is the Word of Almighty God" book 147, written by Pastor Paul R Oost.

DOCTRINES.

BIBLE: INERRANCY

1. The Scriptures are quoted as the absolute standard of truth. (Daniel 10:21, John 10:35)
2. The source of the Scriptures is God, there is no imperfection or error permissible with God. (2 Timothy 3:16, 2 Peter 1:20-21, 1 John 1:5, James 1:17)
3. The Scriptures therefore becomes the final authority in the resolution of disputes. (Romans 4:3, 11:2, Galatians 4:30)
4. The Scriptures are seen as authoritative. (Matthew 26:31, Mark 14:27, Luke 4:8, Acts 23:5 Romans 11:8)
5. The person who does not know the Scriptures is in error. (Mark 12:24)
6. The Lord believed the Scriptures:-
 - a) He implied there was only one Isaiah. (Isaiah 61:1,2 cf Luke 4:16-21, Isaiah 53:1, and Isaiah 6:1-4, 9-10 cf John 12:38-41)
 - b) Jonah was a prophet not a myth. (Matthew 12:39, Luke 11:29)
 - c) Daniel was a prophet not an historian. (Matthew 24:15, Mark 13:14)
 - d) Adam and Eve were created. (Matthew 19:8)
7. The Bible is called God's Word (Mark 7:13, Luke 5:1, 11:28, John 10:35, Acts 6:7, 12:24, Romans 10:17)

BIBLE: INSPIRATION

1. The principle of inspiration is found in (2 Timothy 3:16) "All Scripture is God breathed". Gk. THEO PNEUSTOS.

The Holy Spirit communicated to the human authors God's complete plan (2 Samuel 23:2, 3, Isaiah 59:21, Jeremiah 1:9, Matthew 22:42, 43, Mark 12:36, Acts 4:24, 25, 28:25)

The human authors of Scripture so wrote that in spite of their personalities, they were able to communicate God's plan with perfect accuracy in the language they wrote.

2. The origin of Scripture is beyond human viewpoint. (2 Peter 1:20, 21)

3. The Bible is the mind of Christ. (1 Corinthians 2:16) Therefore it is the absolute standard for believers. (Psalm 138:2)

4. Pre-canon revelation from God occurred through the Holy Spirit. There was no written scripture until the time of Moses. (2 Samuel 23:2, Ezekiel 2:2, 8:3, 11:1, 24, Micah 3:8, Hebrews 3:7)

5. Four categories of Old Testament revelation:

- a) The spoken word - thus saith the Lord. (Isaiah 6:9, 10, Acts 28:25)
- b) Dreams. (Numbers 12:6, Genesis 15:12, 31:10-13, 31:24, Daniel 10:9) - whilst asleep.
- c) Visions. (Isaiah 1:1, 6:1, 1 Kings 22:19) - whilst awake.
- d) Angelic teaching. (Deuteronomy 33:2, Acts 7:53, Galatians 3:19, Psalm 68:17)

6. The extent of revelation:

- a) The unknown past - the Bible portrays past historical details unknown to man apart from revelation. (Genesis 1-11). The accuracy of these historical facts is guaranteed by inspiration. e.g. Creation, Noah's Flood.
- b) Ancient history - whilst the Bible is not a text book of history, all historical citations are accurate.
- c) Objective law - the Old Testament contains many laws for both individuals and national life. These laws express perfectly the mind of God to those people to whom they are addressed.
- d) Some portions of the Bible contain direct quotations from God. The doctrine of inspiration guarantees that such quotations are properly recorded exactly as God desired.
- e) God uses the emotions, trials and triumphs of certain believers to declare His grace in devotional literature like the Psalms, Song of Solomon
- f) Inspiration extends to the recording of falsehoods just as they were uttered. Satan Genesis 3:4
- g) Inspiration guarantees the accuracy of all recorded prophecies.

BIBLE : INSPIRATION FULFILLED PROPHECY PROOF OF INSPIRATION

All scripture is inspired by God (2 Peter 1:19-21) Therefore all Biblical prophecies must come true. This is demonstrated in prophecies already fulfilled.

- 1. Reuben would be unstable and lose his rights as firstborn. Prophecy (Genesis 49:3-4) - Fulfilment (Numbers 26:5-11)
- 2. Simeon would not have land allotted in the Promised Land. Prophecy (Genesis 49:5-7) - Fulfilment (Joshua 19:1-9)
- 3. Levi would not have land allotted in the Promised Land. Prophecy (Genesis 49:5-7) - Fulfilment (Joshua 21:4-7)
- 4. Judah would become the ruler over the nation of Israel. Prophecy (Genesis 49:8-12) - Fulfilment (Numbers 10:14, Joshua 15:1 Revelation 5:5)
- 5. Zebulun would receive an allotment of land on the coast and it would reach down to Sidon. Prophecy (Genesis 49:13) - Fulfilment (Joshua 19:10-16) as well as history when they took the land to the south of their area previously allocated to Asher and their influence reached right down to Sidon.
- 6. Issachar would be given a fertile area between two mountains and would be a servant. Prophecy (Genesis 49:14-15) - Fulfilment (Joshua 19:17-22)
- 7. Dan would be a full member of Israel but would lead the nation away in idolatry. Prophecy (Genesis 49:16-18) - Fulfilment (Joshua 19:40-48) and the fact that idolatry in the nation was led by this tribe. It is also of interest that his tribe is not mentioned as having any part in the 144,000 witnesses in (Revelation 7).
- 8. Gad would be a warrior tribe. Prophecy (Genesis 49:19) - Fulfilment (1 Chronicles 5:18-20, 12:8)
- 9. Asher would have a rich and fertile land. Prophecy (Genesis 49:20, Deuteronomy 33:24-25) - Fulfilment - History - Asher enjoyed a rich and fertile area together in more recent times successful oil exploration.
- 10. Naphtali would be quick to spread good news Prophecy (Genesis 49:21) - Fulfilment (Matthew 4:13-15) as Jesus began his ministry in Naphtali and most of the disciples who gave the good news came from that region.

11. Joseph would receive great blessing. Prophecy (Genesis 49:22-26) - Fulfilment (Deut 33:13-17)
12. Benjamin would be a ferocious group Prophecy. (Genesis 49:27) - Fulfilment (Judges 19, 20:21-47)
13. Joshua and Caleb to enter into the Promised Land after 40 years wandering. Prophecy (Numbers 14:24, 30) - Fulfilment (Joshua 3:7,17 14:6-12)
14. Sisera would be defeated by a woman. Prophecy (Judges 4:9) - Fulfilment (Judges 4:21)
15. Hophni and Phineas would die on the same day. Prophecy (1 Samuel 2:34) - Fulfilment (1 Samuel 4:11)
16. The priesthood would be removed from the family of Eli. Prophecy (1 Samuel 2:27-36, 3:11-14) - Fulfilment (1 Kings 2:26-27)
17. Saul was to be the first king of Israel and would save the nation from the Philistines. Prophecy (1 Samuel 9:15-16) - Fulfilment (1 Samuel 11;14)
18. Saul's kingdom would not continue. Prophecy (1 Samuel 13:14, 15:28, 24:20) - Fulfilment (2 Samuel 3:1, 5:1-3)
19. Saul to die in battle on a certain day. Prophecy (1 Samuel 28:19) - Fulfilment (1 Samuel 31:1-6)
20. Solomon to build the Temple not David. Prophecy (1 Chronicles 17:1-12) - Fulfilment (1 Kings 7:51)
21. The sword not to depart from David's house because of sin. Prophecy (2 Samuel 12:10-12) - Fulfilment (2 Samuel 13:28-29, 16:21-22)
22. The bones of Jeroboam's pagan priests to be burnt upon the false altar that Jeroboam had constructed. Prophecy (1 Kings 13:1-3) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 23:4-6)
23. Jeroboam's dynasty to be destroyed. Prophecy (1 Kings 14:10-11) - Fulfilment (1 Kings 15:27-28)
24. Ahab to be victorious over the Syrians. Prophecy (1 Kings 20:28) - Fulfilment (1 Kings 20:29-30)
25. Ahab to die in battle for killing Naboth. Prophecy (1 Kings 21:19, 22:17) - Fulfilment (1 Kings 22:37)
26. The dogs would then lick his blood from his chariot. Prophecy (1 Kings 21:19) - Fulfilment (1 Kings 22:38)
27. Jezebel to be eaten by wild dogs. Prophecy (1 Kings 21:23, 2 Kings 9:10) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 9:30-37)
28. Elisha to receive a double portion of Elijah's spirit. Prophecy (2 Kings 2:9) - Fulfilment demonstrated by the fact that the Bible records that Elisha performed twice as many miracles as Elijah.
29. Naaman to recover from his leprosy. Prophecy (2 Kings 5:3,8,10) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 5:14)
30. The starving inhabitants of Samaria to receive an abundance of food in twenty four hours. Prophecy (2 Kings 7:1) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 7:16-17)
31. An arrogant aide to the king to see the miracle but not to eat of the food. Prophecy (2 Kings 7:2,19) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 7:17,20)
32. Beb-Hadad, a Syrian king to recover from his sickness, but die anyway.. Prophecy (2 Kings 8:10) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 8:15)
33. Jehu to have four generations on the throne of northern kingdom. Prophecy (2 Kings 10:30) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 15:12)
34. Jehu's dynasty to then be destroyed. Prophecy (Hosea 1:4) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 15:8-12)
35. Joash to defeat the Syrians on three occasions. Prophecy (2 Kings 13:18-19) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 13:25)
36. Jehoram to suffer with a disease because of sin. Prophecy (2 Chronicles 21:15) - Fulfilment (2 Chronicles 21:18-19)
37. Amaziah to die because of his idolatry. Prophecy (2 Chronicles 25:16) - Fulfilment (2 Chronicles 25:20-27)
38. Sennacherib to be assassinated in his own land. Prophecy (Isaiah 37:7) - Fulfilment (Isaiah 37:37-38)

39. Sennacherib's attempt to invade Jerusalem not to be successful. Prophecy (Isaiah 37::33-35) - Fulfilment (Isaiah 37:36-37)
40. Hezekiah to be healed of a terminal disease. Prophecy (Isaiah 38:5) - Fulfilment (Isaiah 38:9)
41. Cyrus to allow the Jews to go back to Jerusalem. Prophecy (Isaiah 44:28) - Fulfilment (Ezra 1:1-2)
42. Zedekiah to be captured by Nebuchadnezzar. Prophecy (Jeremiah 21:7) - Fulfilment (Jeremiah 52:8-11)
43. Jehoahaz to die in Egyptian captivity and not return to Judah. Prophecy (Jeremiah 22:10-12) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 23:33-34)
44. Jehoiachin to be captured by Nebuchadnezzar. Prophecy (Jeremiah 22:25) - Fulfilment (2 Kings 24:15)
45. Coniah was told that no seed of his would sit on the throne of David. Prophecy (Jeremiah 22:28-30) - Fulfilment - historical. This prophecy is in apparent contradiction to the Davidic Covenant of (2 Samuel 7:8-16) where David was promised a "son" who would reign forever on his throne. This apparent contradiction is solved by the virgin birth of the Lord Jesus Christ as Mary was descended from David via Nathan. (Luke 3:23-31)
46. Hananiah, a false prophet to die within a year. Prophecy (Jeremiah 28:15-16) - Fulfilment (Jeremiah 28:17)
47. Nebuchadnezzar to invade Egypt. Prophecy (Jeremiah 43:9-13) - Fulfilment - history
48. Nebuchadnezzar to defeat the Egyptians at Carchemish. Prophecy (Jeremiah 46) - Fulfilment - history.
49. Nebuchadnezzar to be given the mind of an animal because of pride. Prophecy (Daniel 4:19-27) - Fulfilment (Daniel 4:28-37)
50. Belshazzar to have his kingdom removed from him. Prophecy (Daniel 5:5, 25-28) - Fulfilment (Daniel 5:30)
51. Alexander the Great to establish a world empire in a very short time. Prophecy (Daniel 2:32-39, 7:6, 8:5-8, 21, 11:3) - Fulfilment - history.
52. Alexander to defeat the Persians - Prophecy (Daniel 8:5-8) - Fulfilment - history
53. Alexander to die at the height of his power and his kingdom to be divided into four parts. Prophecy (Daniel 8:8, 22, 11:4) - Fulfilment - history tells us that at the height of his power Alexander died of a fever in Babylon at the age of 33.
- After a period of some twenty years of internal struggle and fighting the eleven generals of the Greek army who had survived Alexander were reduced to four called in Scripture the four winds of heaven, Ptolemy, Seluchus, Cassander and Lysimachus.
54. Antiochus Epiphanes to persecute the Jews and desecrate their Temple. Prophecy (Daniel 8:11-25) - Fulfilment - history. The whole of (Daniel 11) represents historical prophecies of the Greek dynasties based on Ptolemy and Seluchus which lasted until the time of Julius Caesar with Cleopatra being the last Greek ruler of Egypt. [SEE Prophecy: Prophecy and History Fulfilled]
55. Zacharias would be mute until the birth of John the Baptist. Prophecy (Luke 1:20) - Fulfilment (Luke 1:57-64)
56. John the Baptist to be the herald for the Lord Jesus Christ. Prophecy (Luke 1:76-77) - Fulfilment (Matthew 3:1-11, Luke 3:2-6)
57. Simeon to live until he had seen the Messiah. Prophecy (Luke 2:25-26) - Fulfilment (Luke 2:28-30)
58. Peter would deny Jesus Christ. Prophecy (John 13:38) - Fulfilment (John 18:24-27)
59. Peter to die as a martyr. Prophecy (John 21:18-19, 2 Peter 1 :12-14) - Fulfilment - history
60. Judas to give himself over to Satan. Prophecy (John 6:70) - Fulfilment (John 13:27)
61. Judas to betray Jesus. Prophecy (John 13:21) - Fulfilment (John 18:2-5)
62. Paul would suffer a lot for the Lord Jesus Christ. Prophecy (Acts 9:16) - Fulfilment (2 Corinthians 11:23-28, 12:7-10, Philippians 1:29-30)
63. Paul would be a minister to the Gentiles. Prophecy (Acts 9:15) - Fulfilment (Romans 11:13, Ephesians 3:1)
64. Paul would preach before kings. Prophecy (Acts 9:15) - Fulfilment (Acts 24-26)

65. Paul would go to Rome. Prophecy (Acts 23:11) - Fulfilment (Acts 28:16)

BIBLE: INTERPRETATION

In receiving revelation which comes through the Holy Spirit as He teaches the Word of God to a believer in Christ certain basic rules are necessary in order to understand the Word of God. The science of interpretation is called hermeneutics. Interpretation should be undertaken using the following concepts.

1. The purpose of the Bible as a whole: - each text must be interpreted in the light of the total content of Scripture as the Bible does not contradict but complements itself.
2. The particular message of each book of the Bible: - the interpretation of a book must be in conformity with its purpose. In this way Ecclesiastes will need to be interpreted in a different way to Psalms or the Revelation.
3. To whom addressed: - while all Scripture is equally inspired not all Scripture is equally applicable. As an example in David's day, one could plead with the Lord that the Holy Spirit would not be taken away from you (Psalm 51:11). However since Pentecost the Holy Spirit has been permanently in all believers and therefore cannot be removed thus such a prayer is no longer valid today. (John 14:16,17).
4. The context: - review the surrounding text as to the context and interpret in relation to that context.
5. Similar teachings elsewhere in the Bible where study of one book may help interpretation in a related book, cf. Daniel and Revelation.
6. Accurate exegesis from the original languages.
7. Literal Interpretation: - unless otherwise guided the person should assume a literal interpretation rather than a symbolic.
8. Guard against prejudice: - each passage must be allowed to say what it does even if it fails to immediately resolve apparent lack of harmonization with other passages in the Bible.

BIBLE – PENTATEUCH

1. The Pentateuch comprises Genesis, Exodus Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy
2. Its human author was Moses.
3. The separation into five books probably took place when the Old Testament was translated into Greek at Alexandria during the third and second centuries BC.. From the division came the name "Pentateuch" meaning five.
4. The evidence that Moses was indeed the human author of these books is as follows:-
 - a) God commanded Moses to write a book. (Exodus 17:14, 34:27)
 - b) Moses did write a book. (Exodus 24:5-7, Deuteronomy 31:9)
 - c) Moses called his book which was considered by Israel as one book in five sections:-
 - i) The Book of the Covenant. (Exodus 24:7)
 - ii) The Book of this Law. (Deuteronomy 28:58,61, 29:20-27)
 - iii) The Book of the Law. (Deuteronomy 30:10, 31;24-26)
 - d) Copies of Moses' Book of the Law were to be made for Kings. (Deuteronomy 17:18-20)
 - e) God acknowledged the Book of the Law as having been written by Moses, and commanded that it be the rule of conduct for Joshua. (Joshua 1:1-8, 8:30-35)
 - f) Joshua accepted it as the writings of Moses, and copied it. (Deuteronomy 11:26-32, Joshua 8:30-35)
 - g) He added to the book probably the last part of Deuteronomy 34 about Moses' death. (Joshua 24:26)
 - h) Joshua ordered all Israel to obey "The Book of the Law of Moses". (Joshua 23:6)
 - i) During the period of Kings it was the Law. David recognised it. (1 Chronicles 16:40)
 - ii) David ordered Solomon to keep it. (1 Kings 2:3)
 - iii) It was found and obeyed by Josiah and Israel. (2 Kings 22:8, 23:1-24, 2 Chronicles 34:14, 35:12)
 - iv) Jehoshaphat had it taught to all Israel. (2 Chronicles 17:9)
 - v) Joash obeyed it. (2 Kings 14:6, 2 Chronicles 23:11,18)
 - vi) Amaziah obeyed it. (2 Chronicles 25:4)

vii) Hezekiah obeyed it. (2 Chronicles 30:1-18)

i) Prophets called it God's Law, written by Moses. (Isaiah 8:20, Daniel 9:11, Malachi 4:4)

j) Ezra and Nehemiah both attribute the book to Moses. (Ezra 3:2, 6:18, 7:6,10,14,21,25, Nehemiah 1:7-9, 8:8,14, 10:28-29, 13:1)

k) Jesus Christ attributed the whole Law to Moses. (Luke 24:27,44 with Genesis 3:15, 12:1-3, Mark 12:26 with Exodus 3, Mark 7:10 with Exodus 20:12, 21:17)

m) The Apostles ascribed the Law to Moses. (Acts 13:39, 15:1,5,21, 28:23)

n) For more than 3500 years it has been the unified belief of all Jewish scholars and the common people that Moses wrote the Pentateuch.

o) Heathen writers such as Tacitus, Juvenal, Strabo, Longinus, Julian and others agree without question to Moses' authorship.

p) Leaders of heathen religions such as Mohammed ascribe it to Moses.

5. Internal evidence proves one author:-

a) The Pentateuch was written by a Hebrew speaking the Hebrew language, and cherishing the sentiments of his nation.

b) It was written by a Hebrew acquainted with Egypt and Arabia, their customs and their learning. Egyptian science was carefully concealed from strangers, and was for priests and the Royal Family only. Moses is the only known Hebrew who could have fulfilled this requirement. (Acts 7:22, Hebrews 11:23-29).

c) There is an exact correspondence between narratives and the institutions indicating the same author.

d) The style of the five books is in agreement.

e) Moses himself declared that he wrote "this Law". (Exodus 24:4, Numbers 33:2, Deuteronomy 31:9,24)

BIBLE: WORD OF GOD – HEBREWS 4:12

4:12 "For the Word of God is quick and powerful, sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of the soul and the spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart."

How powerfully this verse points out the marvellous work of the Word of God in our lives. The word truly cuts us about if we let it loose within our hearts and minds. This is God's purpose. Note the characteristics of the Word of God here:

1. It is always living. Religion and its way of life is dead, but God's Word is alive, and makes the hearer alive and able to enjoy life. John 10:10.

2. It is powerful. It is energetic in the soul, always achieving it's desired results once it is let loose in the soul of the believer. Power is only effective when the switch is turned on, and we must ensure that the filling of the Holy Spirit is operational (no unconfessed sin in our life and the Bible open before us) so that God's power is able to channel through us.

3. God's Word then will do its work and it is "sharp" as a sword. The Word cuts through to the truth and shows us how we must sort out our life.

4. It is compared to the short fighting sword of the Roman Army, the machaira. This was a weapon that revolutionised warfare, for the soldier was never off balance when using it, and was able to defeat an enemy with a far larger weapon. It was designed to thrust straight through an enemy to their heart or head, and that is what God's Word does; it penetrates our very life.

5. God's Word pierces us and gets to the real issues straight away, right to joints and marrow. This was the way in the ancient world that you said, it gets to, "the heart of the matter".

6. It separates us from misconceptions, and from the errors of thinking that so easily lead us astray from the path of truth, be they emotional attachments(heart), or false categories of thinking(mind).

7. The word is a discerner. God's Word alone lets us see our motivation and it's implications, and lets us see, as an astute critic does, exactly what we have forgotten or fallen short in. It corrects us in both the thinking and the emotions, correcting facts and will; showing us if our love has grown cold, or our thinking slack!

2.11 CONCLUSION

On the next page is a table that briefly summarizes the similarities and differences between Heaven and Hell.

A BRIEF COMPARISON OF HEAVEN AND HELL

SIMILARITIES

1. They are both real places. The Lord Jesus is very specific about Hell by using the word “topos” from which we get “topography” meaning a detailed description of a specific place. (Luke 16:28).
2. PURPOSE: To show God’s glory.
 - Hell shows His glory by His perfect judgement and punishment on evil. Satan, demons and evil people finally get what they deserve in Hell.
 - God punishes justly, man cannot. An unjust legal system is what so many people, even the unsaved, find so frustrating about today’s world.

DIFFERENCES

HEAVEN	HELL
1. Heaven is where Jesus is. (Acts 1:1-11; Acts 7:55)	Hell is complete separation from God, everlasting destruction. (Matthew 25:46)
2. We will be reunited with loved ones in perfect happiness. We will also meet all the saints and the great names of the Bible. (2 Samuel 12:23; Luke 16:22,23; Matthew 19:14; John 14:2)	People are with Satan, demons, murderers, the immoral and perverted, liars, boasters, haters of God etc. (Rev 21:8, Romans 1:26-31).
3. No sin. (Rev 21:27)	Sin is unlimited and gets worse and worse (Rev 22:11).
4. You have a special, spacious dwelling place (mansion) personally prepared by LJC perfectly customized to your personality and character. (John 14:2)	Shared accommodation in the Lake of Fire. (Rev 22:15)
5. A pure and clean and perfectly peaceful environment. (Rev 21:27)	Burns with intolerable heat and brimstone which is sulphur that gives off a foul smelling, highly toxic gas. (Rev 14:10; 21:8)
6. God wipes away every tear. (Rev 21:4)	Weeping (intense, body shaking, uncontrollable crying) that never stops. (Matthew 8:12) <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • A place of sorrows, Ps 18:5
7. No pain, sickness or suffering in a glorious body that never tires. (Perfect health!) Rev 21:4.	Pain of the whole body on fire but not consumed by it, gnashing of teeth in blind rage at yourself, your sins, other people and at God. Their torment never stops.
8. A place of light radiating from God’s glory. No darkness. (Rev 21:23)	Complete darkness, despite the flames, which are never put out. (Matthew 25:30)
9. Can eat and drink, but not necessary for life. (Luke 24:42,43; Rev 22:1,2)	They scream for water and mercy. (Luke 16:24). They will drink the wine of God’s righteous anger (Rev 14:10).
10. Will spend eternity worshipping and serving God. (Rev 5:10, Rev 22:3-6) You can do study and learn and explore all things and places, yet never reach full knowledge. There is no boredom in Heaven!	A bottomless pit of eternal burning and punishment and torture. (Rev 20:1) Torture added to by watching the activities and happiness of the saved in Heaven. (Luke 16: 23-26)

APP

SUMMARY OF DOCTRINES

DOCTRINE	SECTION	PAGE
ADAM: THE FALL	2	94
ANGELS: DEMONS	1	20
ANGELS: MEDIATORS OF REVELATION	1	19
ANGELS: SATAN'S DESTINY	2	70
BIBLE: INERRANCY	3	132
BIBLE: INSPIRATION	3	132
BIBLE : FULFILLED PROPHECY PROOF OF INSPIRATION	3	133
BIBLE: INTERPRETATION	3	135
BIBLE – PENTATEUCH	3	136
BIBLE: WORD OF GOD – HEBREWS 4:12	3	137
BOOKS	3	109
CHRIST: ANGEL OF JEHOVAH	1	19
CHRIST: ASCENSION AND SESSION	1	15
CHRIST: FAITHFULNESS OF CHRIST	1	25
CHRIST: HUMILIATION AND EXALTATION	2	81
CHRIST: HYPOSTATIC UNION – GOD – MAN	1	37
CHRIST: IMMORTALITY	1	35
CHRIST: MINISTRY AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD	2	84
CHRIST: RESURRECTION BODY	1	31
CHRIST: SACRIFICE OF CHRIST	1	15
CHRIST: STONE – CHRIST AS A STONE	2	76
CHRIST: TESTIMONIES ABOUT CHRIST IN ISAIAH	3	128
CHRIST: TESTIMONIES BY CHRIST IN THE REVELATION	1	12
CHRIST: TESTIMONY BY UNBELIEVERS	2	97
CHRIST: TRANSFIGURATION	1	18
CHRISTIAN LIFE: BLESSED IN HEAVENLY PLACES IN CHRIST	1	4
CHRISTIAN LIFE: CONSECRATION	2	60
CHRISTIAN LIFE: - DESTINY OF BELIEVERS	1	34
CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL LIFE	1	56
CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY	1	57
CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY - HEBREWS CHAPTER 6	1	57
CHRISTIAN LIFE: FAITH	2	79
CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT	1	27
CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY	1	53
CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY: CROSS TO THE CROWN	1	54
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SIGNS OF MATURITY (ROMANS 15:1-15)	1	54
CHRISTIAN LIFE: OVERCOMER	2	96
CHRISTIAN LIFE: OVERCOMING BY FAITH	2	97
CHRISTIAN LIFE: POSITION IN CHRIST	2	60
CHRISTIAN LIFE: REWARDS AND CROWNS	1	28
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SERVICE	1	28
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SERVICE – MODEL SERVANT	1	29
CHRISTIAN LIFE: STABILITY	2	60
CHURCH: APOSTLESHIP	2	77
CHURCH: BRIDE OF CHRIST	2	66
CHURCH: COMMUNION: THE LORD'S SUPPER	1	51
CHURCH AND ISRAEL	2	66
CHURCH: SECOND ADVENT	2	68
CHURCH: WORSHIP AND PRAISE	1	29
CONSERVATION	1	44

SUMMARY OF DOCTRINES [continued]

DOCTRINE	SECTION	PAGE
COVENANTS	2	78
COVENANTS: ABRAHAMIC COVENANT	2	78
CREATION	1	45
DEATH	3	103
DISPENSATIONS: MILLENNIUM	2	69
DISPENSATIONS: TRIBULATION	2	69
DRINKING ALCOHOL	1	52
ELIJAH – POWER OF GOD	1	43
ETERNITY FUTURE	2	96
EVIL	3	103
FEASTS OF ISRAEL	1	50
FEEDING THE FIVE THOUSAND – OUTLINE OF HISTORY	1	49
FIELD OF BLOOD	3	99
GENESIS AND REVELATION COMPARED	2	93
GOD: CHARACTER OF GOD	1	3
GOD: DIVINE INSTITUTIONS – FREEWILL	1	22
GOD: DIVINE INSTITUTIONS - NATIONS -NATIONAL DISCIPLINE	3	121
GOD: NAMES AND TITLES OF GOD	1	6
GOD - SHEKINAH GLORY	1	11
GLORY	1	10
GOOD WORKS – ORIGINALLY TITLED WORKS	3	105
HAPPINESS: EXPERIMENTS IN ECCLESIASTES	1	39
HEART	1	40
HEAVEN AND HELL	3	138
HELL AND HADES	1	20
HOLY SPIRIT IS GOD	1	4
HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY IN THE OLD TESTAMENT	1	4
ISRAEL	2	88
JERUSALEM	2	65
JUDAS – BETRAYAL	3	104
JUDAS - OUTLINE OF JUDAS' LIFE	3	104
JUDGMENT: BAPTISM OF FIRE	3	107
JUDGMENT: THE CURSE	2	95
JUDGMENT: GREAT WHITE THRONE	2	70
JUDGMENT: - JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST	3	121
LAMB	2	76
LEAVEN	1	49
KINGDOM: MILLENNIAL KINGDOM	2	67
MEASUREMENTS AND WEIGHTS	2	86
NATIONS AND RACES	2	88
NATIONS: DESTINY OF NATIONS	2	89
NUMEROLOGY	2	82
OLD AGE	1	56
PARABLES	3	120
PARABLES OF CHRIST	3	120
PEACE	1	40
PEARL	2	81
POST MORTEM ON THE DEATH OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST	1	35
PRIESTS: PRIESTLY GARMENTS	2	72
RAPTURE	1	34

SUMMARY OF DOCTRINES [continued]

DOCTRINE	SECTION	PAGE
RELIGION	1	16
RESURRECTION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST	1	36
RESURRECTION OF OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS	1	18
REVELATION	1	5
REVELATION: BLESSINGS IN THE BOOK OF REVELATION	1	13
RICH YOUNG RULER	1	21
SALT	1	49
SALVATION	1	16
SALVATION: EXPIATION AND PROPITIATION	1	11
SALVATION: SIN - BARRIER BETWEEN MAN AND GOD	3	130
SALVATION: SIN – MAN’S NEED FOR SALVATION	3	128
SIN: OLD SIN NATURE	1	41
SIN: OLD SIN NATURE – THE FRUIT OF	1	41
SOUL AND HUMAN SPIRIT	1	42
STONES: JASPER AND SARDIS	2	72
TABERNACLE	1	7
TREES	2	94
TWELVE ANOINTED	2	85
UNBELIEVER	3	127
VEGETARIANISM	1	45
WATER: LIVING WATER	2	93
WEeping	3	110